

Struggling to Survive with Regression Power in the Primordial Saint Sect

- Chapter 151: Lü Yang Was Still Quite Decent as a Person

Chapter 151: Lü Yang Was Still Quite Decent as a Person

[1,595 words]

With the fall of Arhat Fulong, a wisp of soul reincarnated, while his shattered golden body left behind a round, shining golden pill at the same spot.

The next moment, the pill was about to break through the air and flee.

“Hmm? Trying to leave?”

Lü Yang reacted quickly, reaching out and grabbing the golden pill in one swift motion.

“This is... a Śarīra? Fellow Daoist Fulong, you are too generous!”

Lü Yang’s eyes lit up slightly at the sight, clearly recognizing this treasure unique to Buddhist cultivators.

As a rare treasure for Foundation Establishment, this item was of exceptional quality, whether used to assist in Foundation Establishment or in refining artifacts.

His Qi-Eating Bug had recently hit a bottleneck in its growth and could really use something of high quality to nourish it.

With this in mind, he immediately tucked the Śarīra into his pocket.

Afterward, he looted the place again but found nothing else of value.

He shook his head in disappointment, set the cave dwelling on fire, and then drifted away.

At the Sky-reaching Sea of Clouds, Mending Heaven Peak.

“Panlong... still ended up dead, and even the Śarīra was taken by Lü Yang.”

The Master of Mending Heaven Peak gazed into the distance, a hint of regret flickering in his eyes.

He then turned toward the direction of Luofeng Mountain, showing a trace of wariness.

In just fifty years, Lü Yang's name had spread throughout the entire Primordial Saint Sect.

Almost all disciples knew there was a rare old turtle in their sect who had holed up in the sect for fifty years just to outlive a major enemy.

Even some True Persons had started to look down on Lü Yang.

Only the Master of Mending Heaven Peak, who truly understood the inside story, felt extreme dread toward Lü Yang.

He also knew Lü Yang had narrowly escaped a life-and-death catastrophe.

Perhaps other True Persons believed that even if Lü Yang had left the sect and simply fled, Arhat Fulong wouldn't have been able to do anything to him.

However, the Master of Mending Heaven Peak knew that Arhat Fulong truly hated Lü Yang to the core.

He had prepared many targeted methods specifically to eliminate Lü Yang.

Had Lü Yang been careless and left the sect alone.

Even if he had survived, he would have undoubtedly suffered a severe injury that would take at least a hundred years to recover from.

Compared to that, what did fifty years matter?

"This person... must not be offended!"

The Master of Mending Heaven Peak sighed deeply.

The only comfort he had was that both times he had made a move, he had remained hidden in the shadows.

Theoretically, Lü Yang should not have noticed anything.

As for the Wind-Repelling Pills, although losing three of them pained the Master of Mending Heaven Peak greatly, and although Lü Yang's presence had caused him to miss out on the golden Śarīra left after Fulong's death.

At least Fulong had dual cultivated with his daughter, Chen Shuqian, once.

Now, Chen Shuqian had successfully cultivated the Sixfold Nirvana Phoenix Art.

On the other hand, his son, Chen Xin'an, was also growing very well.

"If it were in the past, I would have dared to risk everything as long as I had one Foundation Establishment stage disciple, but now I lack both merit and luck."

"One Foundation Establishment disciple is no longer enough..."

Thinking of this, the Master of Mending Heaven Peak felt another wave of heartache.

His trip to Skeleton Mountain had truly cost him dearly.

He had gained nothing and ended up in complete disgrace.

What made him even more frustrated was that Fulong's Śarīra had fallen into Lü Yang's hands.

For the sake of his children, Chen Xin'an and Chen Shuqian, having a better chance at Foundation Establishment.

He still had to approach Lü Yang and spend a hefty sum to buy the Śarīra back.

He had actually placed three bids on the same item!

It was a complete loss.

The Master of Mending Heaven Peak took a deep breath and suppressed all his negative emotions.

"Forget it, forget it... as long as I can break through to the late stage, it will all be worth it."

With this thought, he immediately summoned a ray of escape light and flew toward Luofeng Mountain.

When he arrived at Luofeng Mountain, his face was already beaming with a warm smile.

He called out loudly, "Is Fellow Daoist Lü here? Chen Taihe of Mending Heaven Peak has come to visit."

The next moment, Lü Yang's figure appeared at the summit of Luofeng Mountain.

His face also carried a radiant smile as he stepped aside and cupped his hands.

“Senior, you have come personally. I failed to welcome you from afar. Please, come into the peak for a chat.”

“Much appreciated! Much appreciated!”

The Master of Mending Heaven Peak immediately descended in his escape light.

The two of them entered the grand hall together and sat facing each other.

Without wasting any words, the Master of Mending Heaven Peak got straight to the point.

“Fellow Daoist Lü, did you truly kill that Fulong?”

“That’s right.”

Lü Yang did not hide it.

When he had made his move, he had not concealed the heavenly secrets.

Any Foundation Establishment True Person could calculate and deduce the sequence of events.

The Master of Mending Heaven Peak knew the details even more clearly.

He immediately spoke cautiously.

“I heard that when a Jiangxi Arhat dies, he leaves behind a golden Śarīra for future cultivation.”

“Now that Fulong has been struck down by heavenly punishment and has no hope of reincarnation, that Śarīra should be in your possession, right?”

Upon hearing this, Lü Yang raised his eyebrows.

“It is indeed in my possession.”

The next moment, he took out a shining golden pill and placed it on the table.

Seeing this, the Master of Mending Heaven Peak squinted his eyes, hiding the greed in them.

“...I wish to trade for this item with Fellow Daoist.”

As he spoke, a hint of tenderness appeared on his face.

“To tell you the truth, my son Xin’an is currently on the verge of breaking through to Foundation Establishment.”

“As a father, I naturally ought to lend him a helping hand.”

Lü Yang responded with a half-smiling expression.

Really?

I don’t believe you.

This expression made the Master of Mending Heaven Peak feel slightly embarrassed.

Knowing Lü Yang wouldn’t make a move without seeing the profit, he sighed.

“What do you want, Fellow Daoist?”

Lü Yang smiled slightly.

“What do you have, Senior?”

Beast!

The Master of Mending Heaven Peak cursed in his heart.

He immediately revealed his trump card.

“I have a secret technique that I can exchange with Fellow Daoist, something that would benefit you as well.”

After speaking, he took out a jade slip and placed it on the table.

Lü Yang scanned it with his divine sense and immediately showed a look of surprise.

Although the contents of the secret technique in the jade slip were incomplete, he could still deduce its effects.

It was actually a Tribulation Substitution Art.

“Early Foundation Establishment cultivators suffer the pain of the Furious Wind of Li Bi, with a lifespan of only three hundred years.”

“Moreover, with each step forward in the Foundation Establishment realm, one would trigger the realm’s sensing rejection.”

“When breaking through from early to mid Foundation Establishment, one needs to incorporate Heavenly Fiend and Earth Sha energies to refine innate divine abilities.”

“However, this incorporation process is extremely dangerous.”

“Once the Foundation Establishment realm senses it, it will descend with fierce flames known as 【Yin】 .”

“The Yin Fire rises from the Yongquan Acupoint, burning straight to the Nirvana Palace, destroying the internal organs.”

This was both an opportunity and a crisis.

If one endured it, the Heavenly Fiend and Earth Sha refined by the Yin Fire would completely transform into innate divine abilities, fusing with the True Person’s soul.

If one failed to endure it, they would be reduced to ashes.

Likewise, when breaking through from mid to late Foundation Establishment, the Foundation Establishment realm would summon 【Heavenly Lightning】 .

Only by enduring it could one become a late-stage Foundation Establishment True Person.

Failure would result in death.

As for breaking through to complete Foundation Establishment, the tribulations would differ once again.

At that stage, one could attempt to ascend and seek the Golden Core.

The secret technique of the Master of Mending Heaven Peak was specifically designed to withstand these tribulations.

“By using one’s own bloodline offspring as a medium, the karmic burden of the tribulation could be transferred to them.”

“The offspring would bear the cause and face the tribulation, while the practitioner reaped the benefits and enjoyed the transformation after the tribulation...”

In an instant, Lü Yang understood the Master of Mending Heaven Peak’s intentions.

He intended to use this secret technique to make his children, Chen Shuqian and Chen Xin’an, bear the 【Heavenly Lightning】 for him.

Thus, he could break through to late Foundation Establishment.

“No wonder...”

Thinking of this, Lü Yang’s expression suddenly became strange.

The reason was simple: Chen Xin’an was fake!

In this lifetime, the real Chen Xin’an had long been killed by him.

The one who had survived was the Banner Spirit Chen Xin’an, merely wrapped in the real Chen Xin’an’s karma.

In this situation, if the Master of Mending Heaven Peak tried to use this secret technique to transfer the tribulation to Chen Xin’an, and Lü Yang suddenly stripped away the real Chen Xin’an’s karma and reclaimed the Banner Spirit...

That would be quite the spectacle!

With this thought, Lü Yang’s face immediately showed a most sincere smile.

“Since Senior is doing this for your children’s sake, how could Junior refuse?”

After speaking, he directly pushed the Śarīra across the table.

Seeing this, the Master of Mending Heaven Peak, who had expected to pay a heavy price, was stunned.

He then cupped his hands in gratitude.

“Thank you, Fellow Daoist.”

Who would have thought?

Lü Yang was actually quite decent as a person!

Feeling moved, the Master of Mending Heaven Peak could not help but feel excited.

He planned to return immediately and give the Śarīra to Chen Xin’an, urging him to break through to Foundation Establishment as soon as possible.

Share to your friends

Tip: You can use left, right keyboard keys to browse between chapters.

Chapter 152: Tribulation

[1,428 words]

After watching the Mending Heaven Peak Master depart, the smile on Lü Yang's face gradually faded, and a trace of genuine confusion appeared in his eyes.

"Something's not right."

He believed it just like that?

To be honest, Lü Yang hadn't expected the Mending Heaven Peak Master to trust him from the beginning, as such a seasoned old demon shouldn't easily trust outsiders.

However, the situation was different from what he had imagined. The Mending Heaven Peak Master didn't seem to harbor any suspicion from start to finish. He was quite satisfied to accept Fulong's golden body relic and then hurried back, seemingly eager to hand it over to Chen Xin'an to assist him in breaking through to the Foundation Establishment stage.

This clearly didn't align with the conduct of a real person from the Primordial Saint Sect.

"Greed has clouded his judgment."

Lü Yang calculated with his fingers, feeling somewhat surprised. The current abnormal behavior of the Mending Heaven Peak Master was strange, but it could be explained with just one sentence.

—Great loss of merit, entangled by tribulation energy.

Under the heavenly punishment at Skeleton Mountain, Zhao Xuhe died on the spot, Fulong Arhat was reduced to a pig and dog for ten lifetimes, and the two real persons of the Divine Martial Sect became sacrifices for the Abyssal Sword.

Only the Mending Heaven Peak Master survived.

However, survival didn't mean that heaven and earth would let him go. After most of his fate and merit were cut off, the current Mending Heaven Peak Master was already blinded by tribulation.

"Blinded by tribulation, the spiritual platform is tainted. Things that were once clear are no longer scrutinized, and obvious abnormalities are hard to detect. Acting recklessly, easily angered, unless aided by a high-level expert, even if he can shine for a moment, he will inevitably end in misery."

At this thought, Lü Yang was shocked.

"This eight-hundred-mile earth vein is simply a merit nuclear bomb. Besides the direct explosive power, it even has aftereffects. It's a bit too intense."

The key point was that these aftereffects couldn't be detected by others.

So much so that the Mending Heaven Peak Master, who should have been insidious and cunning, was turned into this. Thinking of this, a thought emerged in Lü Yang's mind:

'What about me?'

In the next second, Lü Yang suddenly formed a spell, and a bright light burst from his Dao foundation, like a clear spring washing over his body, sweeping away the filth.

[Separate the Different]!

As the divine ability continued to operate, Lü Yang's eyes gradually cleared, and he suddenly recalled an obvious problem he had previously ignored:

"Did I give away the item too easily just now?"

According to the sect's customs, his best choice should have been to extort the Mending Heaven Peak Master hard, making it less likely for him to suspect.

But what was the result?

He didn't bargain at all and directly handed over Fulong's golden body relic. If he were the Mending Heaven Peak Master, he would have suspected himself long ago!

"[Separate the Different] couldn't completely sever the cause and effect!?"

"No, it's just that my cultivation isn't enough, the connection is still lingering, so the influence remains."

Lü Yang gasped, his face turning pale, cold sweat streaming down, and after a long time, he slowly regained his composure, his heart heavy.

"Thinking positively, as the mastermind behind the destruction of the eight-hundred-mile Skeleton Mountain earth vein, the impact I received isn't as great as that of the Mending Heaven Peak Master. This is already the merit of [Separate the Different], and coupled with my absorption of the Divine Martial Sect's merit and fate, I still have a bit of clarity."

Those who truly fell, like the Mending Heaven Peak Master, were probably beyond salvation.

The might of heaven and earth had reached such a point!?

In an instant, Lü Yang, who had been slightly inflated due to previously manipulating cause and effect and outlasting Fulong Arhat, suddenly shrank, feeling a bone-chilling cold.

The cause and effect of heaven and earth were not so easily fooled.

Although his innate divine ability had a unique advantage in this aspect, those skilled in swimming drown, those skilled in riding fall, playing with fire, there would always be a day of self-immolation!

"What a damned place."

All along, Lü Yang had held immense respect for the Golden Core True Lords, as the scene of them holding the sun and moon and plucking the stars during the battle for the Dao was still vivid in his memory.

However, at this moment, he changed his mind.

Golden Core True Lords were indeed terrifying, but even they didn't choose to directly destroy the earth vein of Skeleton Mountain when exterminating the Witch Ghost Path in the past!

This showed that even Golden Core True Lords were somewhat constrained by cause and effect and merit, although perhaps not much, but still present. Comparing this to the earth-shaking power of the Golden Core True Lords, it further highlighted the depth of this world.

"Fortunately, the Mending Heaven Peak Master I'm facing is worse off than me."

This was also the subtlety of fate.

If it had been another real person from the Primordial Saint Sect, the flaw Lü Yang revealed would have been fatal. But it happened to be the Mending Heaven Peak Master, which made him wake up directly.

At first glance, this seemed like a coincidence.

However, from the perspective of fate, it was because he had absorbed the merit and fate of the Divine Martial Sect, his life was not yet destined to end, while the Mending Heaven Peak Master's fate had already run out.

"Entangled by tribulation, his retribution is probably yet to come."

Sky-reaching Sea of Clouds, Mending Heaven Peak.

As soon as the Mending Heaven Peak Master returned, he felt the world spinning and was transported into a palace. A maid in luxurious attire respectfully approached:

"Master, Madam wishes to see you."

"She wants to see me?"

The Mending Heaven Peak Master frowned upon hearing this, intending to refuse. However, seeing that the other party had directly transported him over, it was clear that refusal was not an option.

Thinking of this, he followed the maid into the palace.

Before long, a quiet room came into view, with eighteen beautiful maids standing on both sides, each with a different posture, motionless like statues.

In the center, surrounded by them, was a graceful figure.

Three thousand strands of black hair were coiled at the back of her head, pierced by a snake-head hairpin, with the dangling ornaments slightly swaying. She wore a red long dress, faintly revealing her snow-white skin.

Under the hem of the long dress, a breeze lifted, revealing fair thighs. A pair of bare feet stepped lightly on the clouds, warm and jade-like, with a rosy hue. Around her ankles hung a pair of bright silver anklets, producing a tinkling sound as she walked, captivating the heart.

In an instant, the scent of sandalwood filled the air.

However, the Mending Heaven Peak Master showed no sign of being moved, instead revealing an impatient expression: "Is it still about that matter? If so, there's no need to say more."

After a moment, the graceful figure slowly turned around.

Accompanied by the tinkling sound of the silver anklets, a beautiful and dignified face appeared, noble yet subtly seductive.

"Do you insist on letting Shuqian take the tribulation for you?"

Her words seemed like a plea, like a whisper, making one involuntarily feel pity, lose their mind, and agree to all her requests.

However, the Mending Heaven Peak Master was disdainful of this.

"Don't use that trick on me. Moreover, I'm using Qian'er to take the tribulation, and aren't you also trying to use Qian'er to help you break the mystery of the womb after reincarnation?"

"Hmph!"

In the next second, like the spring wind melting ice and snow, the woman's voice suddenly turned cold: "Chen Taihe, since you know, why do you still ruin my reincarnation?"

"Unfounded worries."

The Mending Heaven Peak Master said indifferently: "If I break through to the late Foundation Establishment stage and achieve the position of a great real person, I can naturally calculate your reincarnated body and go to guide it."

"But what if you fail?"

The woman said in a deep voice: "If you fail, Shuqian dies, and I have little time left, not enough to cultivate a second one. How can I break the mystery of the womb?"

At this point, the woman looked directly at the Mending Heaven Peak Master, hoping he could provide a perfect solution.

However, in the end, she only heard an uncompromising answer:

"I won't fail!"

Upon hearing this, the woman's beautiful eyes suddenly showed disappointment, but she quickly regained her composure and said coldly: "Chen Taihe, you will regret this."

In response, the Mending Heaven Peak Master sneered:

"Ruoxiang, don't forget, I am the current Mending Heaven Peak Master!"

Share to your friends

Tip: You can use left, right keyboard keys to browse between chapters.

[1,548 words]

In Luo Feng Mountain, inside a quiet chamber.

Lü Yang sat cross-legged, silently operating a secret technique to contact the Banner Spirit Chen Xin'an inside Mending Heaven Peak.

Very soon, he saw the current situation of the Banner Spirit Chen Xin'an.

At this moment, Chen Xin'an had become completely different from when they first met.

The Peak Lord of Mending Heaven Peak had spent a huge fortune to help him condense a physical body and improve his cultivation.

He lacked neither heavenly treasures nor earthly materials.

After so many years, he had already achieved great success in his cultivation, reaching the Great Perfection of Qi Refining.

He was now ready to attempt breaking through to Foundation Establishment.

"This is indeed a stroke of fortune for you."

Lü Yang nodded slightly.

In fact, most of the Banner Spirits in the Myriad Spirits Banner were unable to improve their strength.

After all, strictly speaking, Banner Spirits were already dead.

However, the leading few Banner Spirits were different.

Su Nu, Master Ting You, the Peak Lord's split soul, Chen Xin'an, and the newly acquired soul of the Yun Family's old ancestor were, in essence, all living beings who had entered the banner.

Such Banner Spirits still had the chance to return to life.

For them, the Myriad Spirits Banner served more as a restraint, preventing them from harming Lü Yang, rather than restricting their own cultivation progress.

However, among these Banner Spirits, Chen Xin'an was the weakest.

After all, the others had all once reached Foundation Establishment, except for him.

If it weren't for the Peak Lord of Mending Heaven Peak putting in great effort and investing who knows how much in spiritual resources and materials, Chen Xin'an probably wouldn't have his current cultivation level.

"All thanks to Master's support."

Within Mending Heaven Peak, Chen Xin'an, without hesitation, took out the golden relic just sent by the Peak Lord of Mending Heaven Peak.

"Master, this is your subordinate's harvest."

Lü Yang was quite satisfied with Chen Xin'an's attitude.

Although he did not care about such a mere golden relic, this was a matter of attitude.

He could choose not to accept it, but Chen Xin'an could not afford not to offer it!

Seeing Chen Xin'an being so considerate, Lü Yang felt even more reassured.

"Keep it."

Lü Yang shook his head.

"Since you have this opportunity, you must seize it."

"If you can achieve Foundation Establishment this time, it will be a great help to me in the future."

"Understood!"

Upon hearing this, Chen Xin'an felt emotional about his good fortune.

Back then, if Lü Yang had not personally chosen him, he would probably still be an ordinary Banner Spirit inside the Myriad Spirits Banner.

Actually, being an ordinary Banner Spirit wasn't necessarily bad.

However, becoming a Foundation Establishment Banner Spirit would broaden his horizons even more!

Seeing this, Lü Yang nodded slightly.

In the next moment, Lü Yang parted his lips and teeth, speaking words that blossomed with divine radiance.

With a majestic voice, he declared:

"Myriad Spirits Banner, Chen Xin'an, may establish the Foundation of the Great Dao!"

[Clarity of Right and Wrong]!

Lü Yang had previously used this divine ability to bless Zhao Xuhe, increasing his chances of Foundation Establishment by ten percent.

Now, he used it on Chen Xin'an as well.

"Chen Xin'an's body was crafted from Foundation Establishment-grade rare materials, giving him a ten percent success rate."

"Adding in the third-grade Mending Heaven True Qi, the great divine ability, and the golden relic, that's a forty percent success rate."

"With my divine ability blessing, it becomes fifty percent."

"Among the true disciples, this is considered a high success rate."

Thinking of this, Lü Yang's expression became a little strange.

After all, he had merely spoken a few words using his divine ability.

Yet the Peak Lord of Mending Heaven Peak had spent both money and effort, racking his brains trying to cultivate a Foundation Establishment for him.

Wouldn't this be too hurtful to the Peak Lord?

At that moment, Lü Yang's eyebrows suddenly twitched.

A gentle breeze blew in, carrying an unexpected fragrance.

A graceful woman stepped forward along with the scent.

The woman had a face like a blooming flower, wearing a fiery red long dress, as dazzling as a blooming rose.

Yet her demeanor was dignified, clearly someone accustomed to high status.

At this moment, she slightly bowed and parted her red lips.

"This humble wife, Ruo Xiang, greets Daoist Friend Yuan Tu."

Seeing this, Lü Yang raised his eyebrows slightly.

He immediately performed a calculation and soon revealed a surprised expression.

"Mending Heaven Peak actually has a second Foundation Establishment True Person?"

He had never heard of this before!

Ruo Xiang seemed to notice Lü Yang's surprise and chuckled softly.

"This humble wife attained the Dao long ago, but my cultivation is not high."

"Thus, I have always kept a low profile for the past century."

"Daoist Friend Yuan Tu has only recently attained the Dao, so it's understandable that you didn't know about me."

Although she spoke so, Lü Yang suspected that Ruo Xiang had deliberately concealed her background.

At this moment, she seemed to have come specifically to reveal her connection to him.

"I see."

With Ruo Xiang's cooperation, Lü Yang quickly calculated the sequence of events.

He commented in an odd tone:

"Daoist Friend, coming to see me in secret without informing Senior Bu Tian, isn't that inappropriate?"

"What's inappropriate about it?"

Ruo Xiang pouted slightly upon hearing this.

"That old man is fully focused on protecting someone in seclusion right now."

"He doesn't have time to care about me."

"Rest assured, he won't find out."

As her words fell, the Peak Lord's wife of Mending Heaven Peak glanced around.

She then took out a strip of red gauze and raised it into the air.

In an instant, the red gauze enveloped the entire hall.

Lü Yang, standing within, clearly felt that this spiritual treasure had the effect of concealing cause and effect.

Once the red gauze descended, the inside was completely isolated from the outside.

Unless one possessed a heaven-defying treasure like the 【Heaven Surveying Instrument】 , nothing that happened inside the red gauze would be detected by outsiders.

Seeing this, Lü Yang raised his eyebrows slightly.

"Daoist Friend, what exactly do you want to do?"

As soon as he spoke, Ruo Xiang said softly:

"To be frank, I wish to kill Chen Taihe!"

As her words fell, Lü Yang was momentarily stunned.

But he quickly regained his composure.

"Daoist Friend wants to kill Senior Bu Tian, but what does that have to do with me?"

"Because you also wish to harm him!"

Ruo Xiang smiled.

"I know about the deal between him and you."

"But as a True Person of the Primordial Saint Sect, how could you have no ulterior motives?"

"Why else would you have given him that relic so easily?"

Lü Yang: "..."

So, it really was the aftershock of triggering the Earth Vein.

Fortunately, judging from this Peak Lord's wife's words and attitude, she seemed to be on his side.

Even so, Lü Yang still did not fully trust her.

"Daoist Friend, there is no need to be suspicious."

Ruo Xiang softened her voice upon seeing Lü Yang's caution.

"Although I became Dao companions with Chen Taihe, it was actually only for the sake of cultivation."

"The son and daughter we bore each have their own uses."

"However, Chen Taihe no longer cares about my needs."

"Naturally, I have to seek another path."

"Your needs are unmet?"

"What do you mean by that?" Lü Yang asked curiously.

Ruo Xiang sighed softly upon hearing this.

"My lifespan in this lifetime is running out."

"In thirty more years, I will have to reincarnate."

"And this is already my second reincarnation."

"With my limited cultivation, I fear I won't be able to break through the Fetal Mystery in my third life."

Although, in theory, a Foundation Establishment True Person could reincarnate five times.

In practice, only the first reincarnation had a ninety percent chance of returning to Foundation Establishment.

Starting from the second reincarnation, the difficulty increased greatly.

If their Dao attainment was insufficient, the reincarnated True Person might get trapped by the Fetal Mystery and end up as an ordinary person.

Generally, only those in the mid-stage of Foundation Establishment could securely return in the second reincarnation.

Late-stage Foundation Establishment meant four safe reincarnations.

Only those who reached Great Perfection in Foundation Establishment could truly live five lives, surviving a thousand years.

Just like Master Ting You, who had been hiding in the secret realm until now.

From Lü Yang's perspective, Ruo Xiang had not even refined her Life-bound Divine Ability.

With such Dao attainment, her second reincarnation was indeed filled with danger.

No wonder she was getting anxious.

However, what did this have to do with the Peak Lord of Mending Heaven Peak?

"I know my cultivation is shallow and my Dao attainment is insufficient."

"Reincarnation is difficult."

"So, I specially requested a secret technique from the Primordial Saint Sect."

Ruo Xiang gently explained, her red lips parting slightly:

"This technique is called the 【True Method of Two Bodies One Heart】."

"It allows me to merge my soul with that of one of my bloodline descendants."

"Once the secret technique is completed, I can share all experiences and insights with the other party."

"In this way, even if I reincarnate, I can quickly break through the Fetal Mystery through the connection of the secret technique."

"And awaken the memories of my previous life."

Upon hearing this, Lü Yang already understood.

The Peak Lord of Mending Heaven Peak wanted to use their children as scapegoats to bear the calamity, meaning their children must die.

Ruo Xiang wanted to use her children to awaken her reincarnated self, meaning her children must live.

—This was a conflict of the Dao!

No wonder the Peak Lord's wife had entered with her first words being that she wanted to kill the Peak Lord.

After all, if she did not kill him, she herself would be the one to die.

Share to your friends

Tip: You can use left, right keyboard keys to browse between chapters.

[1,527 words]

Lü Yang had understood the entire sequence of events.

However, from his perspective, the conflict between the Master of Mending Heaven Peak and Madam Ruo Xiang over their children actually did have a possible compromise.

For example, Madam Ruo Xiang could have chosen not to wait until her lifespan ran out but instead committed suicide to reincarnate directly.

Then, by using a secret technique, she could have awakened her reincarnated self through her children.

Afterward, the Master of Mending Heaven Peak could have used the children to overcome the tribulation, maximizing the use of talents.

But to do this, there must have been a certain level of trust between them.

Clearly, Madam Ruo Xiang and the Master of Mending Heaven Peak probably did not possess that level of trust to entrust themselves to each other.

However, this was also understandable.

After all, in the Primordial Saint Sect, how could there be mutual trust?

Most cooperations were based on holding leverage over each other or sharing common interests.

“I have understood Fellow Daoist’s intention.”

Thinking this far, Lü Yang finally spoke, “But why should I help you? Senior Bu Tian’s cultivation is profound. He is not someone you or I can deal with.”

Upon hearing this, Madam Ruo Xiang, however, asked an apparently unrelated question:

“Does Yuan Tu know why the Saint Sect has the Four Inner Peaks?”

Lü Yang shook his head.

He had long been curious about this.

In the Saint Sect, any Foundation Establishment True Person qualified to establish their own Daoist field in the Sky-reaching Sea of Clouds.

However, generally speaking, even the Daoist fields established by Foundation Establishment True Persons would be reclaimed by the Saint Sect after their death.

The Four Inner Peaks were the only exception.

They had remained fixed above the Sea of Clouds.

Even when there was no Foundation Establishment True Person presiding over them, the organizational structure of the Four Inner Peaks would not be abolished.

“The reason lies in the blessings of our ancestors.”

Madam Ruo Xiang explained, "The first Peak Masters of the Four Inner Peaks were trusted aides who had fought alongside the first ancestor of the Primordial Saint Sect, rendering great merits."

"Therefore, the first ancestor once promised the four Peak Masters that as long as the Sacred Fire Cliff remained, the Four Peaks would never fall."

This promise was certainly effective.

Because the first ancestor of the Primordial Saint Sect was the Nascent Soul Dao Lord of the Saint Sect.

He was still alive and well.

With the ancestor above, who would dare to make him break his word?

"However, under the blessings of the ancestors, the descendants often became unworthy."

At this point, Madam Ruo Xiang revealed a helpless expression, "After countless years, the Four Inner Peaks have actually declined, and outsiders had to be brought in."

This was perfectly reasonable.

After all, the hardships of their generation had already been endured by their founding ancestors.

All that was left for them to do was enjoy.

Who would be willing to continue striving?

Over time, they naturally declined.

However, how could the Four Inner Peaks lack a Foundation Establishment True Person?

Therefore, to resolve the predicament caused by decline, bringing in outside help was the obvious decision.

"Chen Taihe is such a person."

Madam Ruo Xiang spoke bitterly, "Back then, he showcased his talent at Mending Heaven Peak and was taken in as a son-in-law by my family. With my family's support, he became a Foundation Establishment True Person."

“However, from that point on, he was no longer aligned with my family. He began to suppress my family openly and secretly. Several of my relatives who were more talented than me were all abandoned by him. Instead, he supported me, who had lesser talent, just to ensure I remained stuck at the early Foundation Establishment stage, never posing a threat to him.”

Speaking of this, Madam Ruo Xiang seemed on the verge of tears, appearing pitiful and heart-wrenching.

However, Lü Yang did not believe a single word.

She had been selling her misery for a while now, but where was the actual point?

What was his benefit in all this?

Seeing Lü Yang smiling on the surface but already showing impatience between his brows, Madam Ruo Xiang very tactfully stopped sobbing and instead revealed her bargaining chip:

“Chen Taihe is an outsider. Fellow Daoist can be one as well.”

“I am willing to swear a karmic oath. If you kill Chen Taihe, you will become the next Master of Mending Heaven Peak.”

“This is not just a title but also status, identity, and more resources. Chen Taihe’s current cultivation is inseparable from this identity.”

“That’s right. As long as you can kill Chen Taihe.”

Madam Ruo Xiang lowered her starry eyes and took a step closer to Lü Yang, softly whispering, “Everything of Mending Heaven Peak will be yours. Including myself.”

“Oh?”

Lü Yang looked down from above at Madam Ruo Xiang who had come closer, his gaze falling on that skin whiter than frost and snow, sliding down her neck into the bottomless abyss.

The next moment, Lü Yang shook his head, “Madam, please mind your conduct. I have no interest in women.”

The next morning.

Lü Yang watched as Madam Ruo Xiang quietly left, gladly agreeing to cooperate with her.

Not for anything else, but mainly to kill the Master of Mending Heaven Peak and avenge his past humiliation.

For this, Madam Ruo Xiang also presented her plan.

“That old bastard wants to use Xin’an and Shuqian to bear the tribulation on his behalf. But as for Shuqian, I have a way to make him unable to use her during the tribulation.”

The plan coincided with Lü Yang’s own, and even complemented it.

However, Lü Yang did not tell her about Chen Xin’an’s situation.

He merely stated that he would handle the matter with Chen Xin’an himself, and then sent her away from Luo Feng Mountain.

However, a few days later, Luo Feng Mountain welcomed a second visitor.

The visitor wore a straw raincoat and only removed it after entering the mountain, revealing a splendid silk dress and a sweet smile as she said, “Qian’er greets Senior Yuan Tu.”

The daughter of the Master of Mending Heaven Peak, Chen Shuqian!

Lü Yang fixed his gaze on her, narrowing his eyes slightly, then smiled and said, “Congratulations, Fellow Daoist, on establishing your immortal foundation. Longevity is now within reach. You are now one of us.”

Up until now, Lü Yang had actually only met Chen Shuqian once.

That was in the lifetime when he had transformed Yu Suzhen into a superhuman.

Through Yu Suzhen’s body, he had met Chen Shuqian once.

His impression of her was that she was a well-behaved daughter who obeyed her father.

But seeing her now, she appeared completely different.

“Senior flatters me.”

Chen Shuqian bit her red lips lightly and continued, “Though I have established my foundation, it was merely a risky pass. I am far from reaching the former achievements of Senior Yuan Tu.”

“Hmm.”

Lü Yang pinched his fingers to calculate, then showed a strange expression, “Fellow Daoist seems to have come to see me without informing Senior Bu Tian. That doesn’t seem appropriate, does it?”

“What’s inappropriate?”

Chen Shuqian pouted her red lips at his words, “He’s fully focused on guarding my brother. How could he have time to care about me? Senior can rest assured, he won’t find out.”

This scene seemed oddly familiar?

Lü Yang paused for a moment and continued, “Since that’s the case, what brings you here, Fellow Daoist?”

The next moment, just as Lü Yang had expected.

Chen Shuqian’s expression turned sharp as she coldly said, “To speak frankly, I wish to kill my father and mother to seek true freedom. I ask for Senior’s assistance!”

Lü Yang: “. ”

You people really are worthy of being a family!

With Chen Shuqian’s words, Lü Yang immediately understood that the schemes of both the Master of Mending Heaven Peak and Madam Ruo Xiang had probably not escaped the notice of their clever daughter.

‘This is the Saint Sect indeed.’

Lü Yang sighed in his heart, but his expression revealed nothing.

Since someone was offering themselves up, he naturally didn’t mind playing both sides, “What’s in it for me?”

Upon hearing this, Chen Shuqian immediately said, “The foundation I cultivated is called **【Phoenix and Luan in Harmony Dao Foundation】** , a sixth-grade technique created by my father to complement the **【Nine Transforming Dragon Art】** . ”

“By establishing this foundation and dual cultivating with a True Person who has established the **【Myriad Chariots Dragon Riding Dao Foundation】** , a spiritual flame can be catalyzed.”

“This flame is called **【Blue Luan Noon Fire】** . ”

“Noon marks the end of the six yang and the rebirth of one yin. The fire reaches its peak at noon, giving birth to Yi Wood, nurturing all things, endlessly regenerating. This is a flame of healing.”

“Almost all physical and spiritual body injuries can be healed by it.”

“My father’s intention was for me to use this spiritual flame to bear more 【Heavenly Lightning】 for him.”

At this point, a deep hatred flashed in Chen Shuqian’s phoenix-like eyes as she coldly declared, “I am willing to offer this flame as a reward, asking Senior to save my life!”

“Ho.”

Looking at the determined Chen Shuqian, Lü Yang fell into deep thought, for he realized that she seemed to have come without informing Madam Ruo Xiang.

Otherwise, she would not have asked him to save her life.

After all, Madam Ruo Xiang never intended to kill her, even earnestly wishing to protect her.

So strictly speaking, Lü Yang actually didn’t have to do anything.

This... seemed like a free ride.

Share to your friends

Tip: You can use left, right keyboard keys to browse between chapters.

[1,507 words]

Three months later, news came from Mending Heaven Peak.

The master of Mending Heaven Peak intended to undergo the 【Heavenly Thunder】 tribulation and compete for the title of Grand True Person, inviting all the True Persons of the Primordial Saint Sect to come and witness.

As soon as the news broke, it immediately sparked discussions.

"Old Monster Chen is planning to undergo the 【Heavenly Thunder】 tribulation and advance to the late Foundation Establishment stage? He has been holding onto the third strand of Heavenly Fiend and Earth Calamity for so long, and he has finally made up his mind?"

"Publicly facing the tribulation... is he afraid of being ambushed?"

"Nonsense, wouldn't you be worried if it were you?"

"Cut the crap, wouldn't you make a move if it were you?"

For a while, clear qi and resplendent light surged through the Sea of Clouds in the sect, as those at the late Foundation Establishment stage were titled "Grand True Person," regarded as the top combat strength below True Monarch.

Therefore, even in the Primordial Saint Sect, someone advancing to the late Foundation Establishment stage was considered a major event.

Though it might not alarm the True Monarchs, it was only natural to attract Foundation Establishment True Persons to witness it.

It was a good opportunity to observe the power of the 【Heavenly Thunder】 and to accumulate experience for their own future breakthroughs.

Of course, the more important reason was safety.

For the master of Mending Heaven Peak, although he could choose to break through in secret, if someone managed to calculate the time and place of his breakthrough, there would be no one to save him.

So rather than being sneaky, it was better to be open and aboveboard.

In the sect's tradition, if you weren't discovered, it was as if you hadn't done it at all.

You could plot, you could ambush, but you absolutely must not be caught, or the punishment would be severe.

By putting everything on the table, it was actually safer.

At the peak of Mending Heaven Peak, the clouds parted and the mist dispersed, revealing the figure of the peak master.

He stood with hands behind his back, a radiant glow shining from his crown.

This glow was the manifestation of the Mending Heaven Peak Master Chen Taihe's Dao Path.

He had cultivated the 【Yin-Yang Talisman Dao Foundation】 , also known as the 【Yin-Yang Great Dao Diagram】 .

At this moment, various visions emerged within the glow—there was a fierce white tiger sitting atop mountains and ridges, and a fish with a human face, its sound resembling that of mandarin ducks, all harmonizing together.

For a moment, many of the True Persons present felt a heavy pressure on their hearts.

Especially Lü Yang, who also manifested golden auspicious clouds, sitting upright on Mount Luofeng, gazing toward Mending Heaven Peak with a trace of surprise in his heart.

"So strong..."

Because he had fought the Mending Heaven Peak Master in his previous life and had almost killed him, Lü Yang knew the opponent was formidable but had never truly experienced it.

Only now did he realize just how much damage his Golden Core Sword Qi had caused to the peak master in his previous life.

It was definitely not just the destruction of the physical body, but likely the Dao Foundation itself had been utterly shattered.

That was why the peak master at the time couldn't even display his innate divine abilities.

And now, this was the peak master's true full-strength state!

Whoosh—!

The sea of clouds surged, the moon set and the sun rose, the wind rustling the peak master's robes, causing his qi to gradually rise to an incomparable peak.

In the next moment, he took out a porcelain bottle.

After opening the lid, a beam of moonlight slowly flowed out like liquid.

This was one of the Heavenly Fiends, with an extremely special name— **【Chong Guang】** .

【Chong Guang】 , in the heavens, represented the sun and moon, the essence of Taiyin; on earth, it represented metals and stones, the source of the Eight Stones.

At this thought, the peak master couldn't help but glance toward Sacred Fire Cliff, vaguely sensing a calm gaze falling upon him.

'Chong Guang... Heh! Chong Guang!'

Collecting his thoughts, the peak master stopped thinking further.

He directly swallowed this strand of 【Chong Guang】 qi.

In an instant, the stars shifted, and he entered the Foundation Establishment Realm!

All the True Persons of the Primordial Saint Sect, including Lü Yang, immediately followed.

At the same time, Chen Xin'an and Chen Shuqian had already been waiting in the Foundation Establishment Realm, their eyes vacant, as if their divine senses had long been sealed.

"This beast actually uses human pills, and even his own children as pills?"

A young True Person watched from afar and immediately showed a look of shock: "These are his own descendants! Even a tiger doesn't eat its cubs; isn't this too much?"

"Such ignorance."

On the other side, an old True Person shook his head disdainfully: "This is nothing. Our Primordial Saint Sect is vast and abundant, with countless tricks!"

"You all are too young and inexperienced. I've seen bigger scenes than this. When he was raising those two children, I already had my suspicions.

Not to mention anything else, remember how grand the ceremony was when Yuan Tu established his Foundation? Why were these two so obscure and unnoticed?"

Saying this, the old True Person pointed at Chen Xin'an and Chen Shuqian.

"Isn't it because everyone knew these two were raised at the cost of Old Monster Chen's entire fortune, nearly exhausting his centuries of accumulation?"

"This..."

The young True Person felt a chill upon hearing this but could only shake his head helplessly: "It seems even True Persons aren't spared from being treated as consumables."

"Not necessarily."

The old True Person shook his head again: "Actually, this move of Old Monster Chen is very risky. After all, they are still two True Persons. How could they have no power to resist?"

"Why do you think he sealed the divine senses of those two children?"

"Isn't it because he fears that if they regain consciousness, they might ruthlessly abandon their physical bodies and karmic ties, letting their souls escape, which would render his tribulation-substitution technique useless?"

The old True Person counted on his fingers and spoke knowledgeably: "I've lived in the sect for three lifetimes, over eight hundred years, and I've seen countless scenes.

I even recognize Old Monster Chen's secret art. Isn't it the 『Bloodline Substitution Life Technique』 ? It relies on the karmic ties within the bloodline to let someone else bear the tribulation."

"But if the person meant to bear the tribulation abandons their body, how can the substitution work?"

"So, if those two children have enough willpower and luck to break free from Old Monster Chen's suppression and regain consciousness, they might still have a sliver of hope."

Inside the Foundation Establishment Realm, the peak master had already manifested his Dao Foundation, drawing down the Heavenly Thunder.

The first strike alone caused his soul to tremble and his qi to wither by more than half.

At this point, it was impossible to stop.

So Lü Yang relaxed and leisurely left Mount Luofeng, openly walking toward Mending Heaven Peak without any concealment.

"Yuan Tu, stop."

The voice of True Person Yinshan quietly arrived, seriously warning: "Whatever you plan to do to Chen Taihe, do not act in front of so many people."

"Rest assured, Senior Brother."

Lü Yang shook his head: "I am not a reckless person. I am not sneaking into Mending Heaven Peak to take advantage of the situation. I was invited."

Upon hearing this, even True Person Yinshan was stunned.

After a long pause, his voice finally returned:

"Invited...?"

In the next moment, a soft and charming voice echoed from within Mending Heaven Peak: "True Person Yinshan, there is no need for suspicion. This time, it was I who invited Yuan Tu inside."

As the words fell, the gates of Mending Heaven Peak swung wide open.

Madam Ruo Xiang appeared in a bright red long dress, wearing a dazzling smile, and immediately reached out to embrace Lü Yang by the neck, pulling him toward herself.

"...???"

Inside the Foundation Establishment Realm, upon seeing this scene, the peak master spat out blood on the spot.

His eyes widened in fury and disbelief as he looked at Lü Yang and Madam Ruo Xiang.

For a moment, the entire Primordial Saint Sect fell silent.

Almost every True Person who witnessed this scene couldn't help but widen their eyes.

The young True Person instinctively glanced at the old True Person beside him.

"...Senior, have you ever seen a scene like this before?"

The old True Person was immediately speechless.

Taking advantage of the peak master's life-or-death Heavenly Thunder tribulation to enter Mending Heaven Peak in front of the entire sect, and clearly having an affair with the peak master's wife...

This was a scene he had never witnessed before!

When did this start?

How did they hook up?

And these two shameless people actually chose this very moment when the peak master was breaking through!

Was it intentional?

This was clearly meant to destroy both his body and spirit!

At this moment, the way many True Persons of the Primordial Saint Sect looked at Lü Yang completely changed.

Their eyes were filled with shock, fear, and even admiration.

Seeing through illusions and appearances, completely unbound by moral and ethical constraints...

What a peerless devil!

We are merely a bit wicked, but you... you are the true living beast!

Share to your friends

Tip: You can use left, right keyboard keys to browse between chapters.

[1,013 words]

Fudan University Graduate School

At Sacred Fire Cliff, True Person Chong Guang was meditating in seclusion.

However, at that moment, the voice of True Person Yinshan rumbled forth, seemingly suppressing some emotion, though a bit of it slipped through.

"Senior Brother! Come out and watch the show!"

Upon hearing this, True Person Chong Guang opened his eyes and shook his head.

"Yinshan, how many times have I told you? When encountering situations, remain calm and composed; don't be so lacking in depth."

"Isn't it just Chen Taihe attempting to break through to the late Foundation Establishment stage?"

"He's had the third Heavenly Gang Earth Fiend for a long time, and now the Substitute Tribulation Secret Technique is also prepared. What's so strange about him attempting the late stage?"

Although he said this, he didn't show any expression of reprimand; instead, there was a hint of nostalgia.

After all, he used to be like True Person Yinshan, inexperienced and easily shocked by minor events.

Now, however, he had become numb to many things.

Nothing in the world could stir his heart anymore.

Loneliness, solitude, and blandness were the paths every Foundation Establishment True Person had to endure.

The bittersweet experiences of cultivation and the myriad aspects of the mortal world were all encompassed within.

"No, Lü Yang is currently on top of the Mending Heaven Peak Master's wife!"

"...What?"

In the next second, True Person Chong Guang, who had just been calm and composed, suddenly opened his eyes wide, instinctively doubting what he had just heard.

Lü Yang, on top?

Reddit

Who? The Mending Heaven Peak Master's wife!?

Currently!?

UNESCO Documentation

In an instant, True Person Chong Guang activated his divine sense, probing out from Sacred Fire Cliff, gazing intently towards Mending Heaven Peak.

Immediately, a grand scene unfolded before his eyes.

He saw the vast Mending Heaven Peak, with the Peak Master undergoing tribulation outside, while inside, Lü Yang and Madam Ruo Xiang had already entered a grand hall together.

Their voices exploded through the amplification formation.

The surrounding True Persons of the Sacred Sect were all dumbfounded.

Wait, are you two really doing this?

"Despicable! Despicable! Despicable!"

Within the Foundation Establishment realm, the Mending Heaven Peak Master was so enraged that his face turned ashen.

He never expected Lü Yang and Madam Ruo Xiang to commit such an inhuman act.

But in the next second, he dismissed all distracting thoughts.

"Right now... the tribulation takes precedence!"

The Mending Heaven Peak Master was, after all, a great demon.

From anger to calmness, he adjusted quickly, even feeling a bit of disdain towards Lü Yang and Madam Ruo Xiang.

This despicable couple, do they think that using such lowly methods can disturb my state of mind?

Thinking of this, a cold light flashed in the Mending Heaven Peak Master's eyes.

"Yuan Tu... it seems he already knows that I collaborated with Fulong?"

This is definitely revenge!

Unable to retaliate against me, he targets my wife instead?

Beast!

Library of Congress

For a moment, the Mending Heaven Peak Master even marveled at Lü Yang's audacity and capability.

No wonder True Person Chong Guang valued him so highly; he's truly audacious!

"Forget it, continue with the tribulation."

The Mending Heaven Peak Master calmed his mind, ignoring the deliberately broadcasted, resonating high-pitched voices, preparing to focus on the impending heavenly tribulation.

However, in the next second, he was stunned.

Because at that moment, Chen Shuqian, whose divine sense should have been sealed by him, suddenly trembled.

Her previously dazed eyes quickly became clear!

"This is... [Dual-Body Harmonious True Method]!?"

"Despicable!"

Only at this moment did the Mending Heaven Peak Master truly panic, instantly understanding why Madam Ruo Xiang and Lü Yang would do such a thing at this time.

[Dual-Body Harmonious True Method], a technique where both parties deliberately share all insights and experiences.

Madam Ruo Xiang had planted it on Chen Shuqian, intending to use it after her own reincarnation to help Chen Shuqian break the mystery of the womb.

However, now, this true method was used by Madam Ruo Xiang on Chen Shuqian, awakening her from the dazed state imposed by the Mending Heaven Peak Master.

In a way, it was akin to breaking the mystery of the womb!

"Ugh..."

Within the Foundation Establishment realm, Chen Shuqian's brows relaxed, and her previously halted thoughts resumed.

"Ah!"

In the next second, a scream echoed from Mending Heaven Peak.

Almost simultaneously, Chen Shuqian abruptly opened her beautiful eyes!

She was awake!

And in the instant of awakening, Chen Shuqian understood the situation.

Without any hesitation, under the furious gaze of the Mending Heaven Peak Master, she self-destructed!

"No—!"

Her exploding body turned into a sky full of blood mist, instantly reddening the Mending Heaven Peak Master's eyes.

Because as Chen Shuqian self-destructed, severing the bloodline connection, he clearly sensed that the Substitute Tribulation Secret Technique he had planted on her was dissipating, no longer able to divert the heavenly thunder for him!

"Ungrateful wretch!"

The Mending Heaven Peak Master nearly ground his teeth to pieces.

"If I hadn't painstakingly gathered resources for you, how could you have reached Foundation Establishment? Is this how you repay me?"

"Father, you're mistaken."

Reddit

A wisp of Chen Shuqian's soul instantly escaped the Foundation Establishment realm, leaving behind only an echo.

"As father and daughter, I didn't want to make things so clear."

"But to be honest, I've never felt happy being with you."

As her voice fell, the Mending Heaven Peak Master saw Chen Shuqian gently landing back on Mending Heaven Peak.

At the same time, the gate of Mending Heaven Peak opened, revealing a grand hall.

Lü Yang and the somewhat disheveled Madam Ruo Xiang supported each other as they walked out.

In fact, from beginning to end, this was all Madam Ruo Xiang's idea.

Such a crazy act of revenge showed how deep her resentment towards the Mending Heaven Peak Master was.

"Chen Taihe, I also have something to say to you."

Madam Ruo Xiang slightly parted her red lips, looking at the Mending Heaven Peak Master with a cold smile.

"After being with you for so long, it wasn't as enjoyable as just once with Yuan Tu."

In the next second, Chen Shuqian descended, respectfully bowing before Lü Yang.

"Thank you, Senior Yuan Tu, for saving my life. I will repay you generously in the future."

Mending Heaven Peak Master: "..."

In an instant, Lü Yang watched as the Mending Heaven Peak Master's face turned red at a speed visible to the naked eye, with white smoke even rising from his seven orifices.

Share to your friends

Tip: You can use left, right keyboard keys to browse between chapters.

[1,443 words]

At this moment, the expression of the Peak Master of Mending Heaven Peak was blank.

Chen Shuqian's awakening, he could still convince himself that it was Lady Ruo Xiang's handiwork.

Although it had exceeded his expectations, the method was still understandable to him.

But Chen Xin'an was different!

There were no spells set by Lady Ruo Xiang on Chen Xin'an's body.

Logically speaking, it should have been impossible for him to break free from the divine sense suppression technique!

Had he already been the old master's man long ago?

Who was the old master?

"Could it be—"

The Peak Master of Mending Heaven Peak suddenly turned his head, only to see Lü Yang holding Lady Ruo Xiang with one arm and suppressing Chen Shuqian with the other, revealing a sinister smile toward him.

"No, impossible!"

In an instant, a ridiculous thought suddenly popped into the Peak Master of Mending Heaven Peak's mind: "I brought you back before you even reached Foundation Establishment!"

"There is nothing impossible."

Chen Xin'an shook his head: "From the very beginning, I have been the old master's man. Without the old master's command, how could I have played along with you all this time?"

At this moment, the Peak Master of Mending Heaven Peak felt a bone-deep chill.

It was not just because of Chen Xin'an, but more so because of the hidden hand behind Chen Xin'an.

The depth of that one's schemes and the vastness of their plans made him feel as if he had fallen into an ice cellar.

"...Such high methods!"

The Peak Master of Mending Heaven Peak sighed deeply.

Even he had to admit admiration.

If what Chen Xin'an said was true, then this person had already dared to scheme against him before even reaching Foundation Establishment!

But thinking of this, the Peak Master of Mending Heaven Peak was still utterly puzzled.

Was it worth it?

Did they really have such a great enmity?

The Peak Master of Mending Heaven Peak had no mind to think further.

He could only look at Chen Xin'an again: "Xin'an... you cannot treat me this way! Weren't you the one who understood your father the best before?"

"I must break through to the late Foundation Establishment stage! I still have many things I need to do. I must become a Grand True Person, gain a voice in the Saint Sect, earn the favor of a True Monarch. I have prepared so much!"

"The millennial great calamity is approaching. As long as I plan well, there is hope to seize the opportunity to pursue Golden Core!"

"Xin'an, I beg you..."

The Peak Master of Mending Heaven Peak could not believe it.

Unlike Chen Shuqian, Chen Xin'an had truly been nurtured by him personally.

Could the father-son relationship really lose to Lü Yang?

However, holding onto that last shred of hope, all he heard was a cold reply:

"Farewell, father... and farewell to my cowardice."

Boom!

In the next moment, Chen Xin'an, whose divine sense had been suppressed, also chose to self-destruct.

Then, a layer of karma visibly dissipated at a speed that could be seen by the naked eye.

In the blink of an eye, only the Peak Master of Mending Heaven Peak was left standing in the Foundation Establishment realm.

Just as he was about to say something, the long-accumulated, rolling 【Heavenly Thunder】 suddenly descended with a roar.

In an instant, his figure was submerged, leaving only a mournful and extremely venomous roar echoing faintly:

"Lü Yang——!!!"

Below, within Mending Heaven Peak, as a white mist descended, transforming into Chen Xin'an's figure before Lü Yang, he knelt respectfully on the ground.

Everyone was dumbfounded.

Even within Sacred Fire Cliff, True Person Chong Guang, who once praised Lü Yang as the future pillar of the Saint Sect, had not expected Lü Yang to pull off something like this.

"Goodness, old monster Chen died miserably!"

"Wife, daughter, son... all turned out to be Yuan Tu's people. Who wouldn't die from that? Just how did Yuan Tu manage this? Does he have some mind-controlling secret art?"

"Impossible. How could a mind-controlling art be effective on a True Person?"

"It can't be because he's... good in bed, right?"

"Whatever it is, it must be one hell of a talent."

For a moment, the True Persons of the Saint Sect whispered among themselves.

They subconsciously took a few steps back as they looked at the Peak Master of Mending Heaven Peak still struggling under the 【Heavenly Thunder】 .

To be fair, no one felt any sympathy for the Peak Master of Mending Heaven Peak.

On one hand, he had never been well-liked.

On the other hand, his actions had vaguely touched the bottom lines of some people.

Using Foundation Establishment True Persons as talents!

In the Saint Sect, Foundation Establishment had always been a clear dividing line.

Once one reached Foundation Establishment, one left the ranks of talents and gained the right to choose.

But if even True Persons could be treated as talents, this boundary would become blurred.

Especially since the Peak Master of Mending Heaven Peak had used this method to break through to late Foundation Establishment, wouldn't other mid-stage Foundation Establishment True Persons follow suit and secretly target those at early Foundation Establishment like them?

Thus, they were all pleased with the Peak Master of Mending Heaven Peak's downfall.

"Chen Taihe, you deserved to die!"

Especially with both Chen Shuqian and Chen Xin'an escaping and turning on the Peak Master of Mending Heaven Peak, this further solidified the transcendent status of Foundation Establishment True Persons.

This outcome was enough to suppress the restless ambitions of many.

Moreover, this was the Saint Sect, where the sect's style had always been like this.

So, for a moment, many people even looked at Lü Yang with a bit of favor.

Meanwhile, the elderly True Person, who had previously boasted of his vast experience, also looked as if his worldview had been shattered.

His gaze toward Lü Yang was like looking at a superhuman.

It was not until the young True Person beside him called out several times that he finally snapped out of it, letting out a long breath.

"From now on, never offend Yuan Tu!"

Once he came back to his senses, the elderly True Person warned in a low voice, "This person is deeply demonic and extremely cunning. With just early Foundation Establishment, he managed to kill two mid-stage Foundation Establishment True Persons in succession..."

"Not that exaggerated, right?"

The young True Person seemed somewhat unconvinced: "One died from exhaustion, the other was plotted against with his wife and daughter. Neither was a straightforward duel victory."

"If it were a direct duel, he might not be that formidable."

Saying this, the young True Person smiled confidently: "I think I should be able to fight him."

"You don't understand! That's precisely what makes him terrifying!"

The elderly True Person shook his head: "You only see his schemes, but you fail to see the calculative abilities required to pull them off."

"If one cannot precisely calculate heavenly secrets and grasp karma, it is impossible to achieve what he did. Either he holds a supreme treasure of heavenly secrets, or he is innately gifted, with Dao attainment far surpassing his cultivation realm. Whichever it is, his combat ability cannot possibly be weak!"

"Besides, he doesn't entirely avoid direct combat."

"Decades ago, didn't he fight against a True Person of the Divine Martial Sect at Skeleton Mountain? I heard that the battle was utterly one-sided."

"Though the Divine Martial Sect isn't large, it does have some heritage."

"At the very least, it possesses a high-grade spiritual treasure to suppress the sect, and Huanwu, who fought him, had also refined his life-bound item, making him a notable figure among early Foundation Establishment cultivators."

"But what was the result?"

The more the elderly True Person spoke, the heavier his expression became: "Yet now, when people think of Yuan Tu, the first thing that comes to mind is his schemes!"

For a person of immense strength, the first impression was not their strength?

That was the true terror!

Using one kind of flamboyance to overshadow another, even greater flamboyance.

Strictly speaking, this was even a form of hiding one's true capability, but few could realize this.

For a moment, the elderly True Person did not even dare to say his conclusion aloud, fearing he might attract Lü Yang's attention.

He was already over eight hundred years old, nearing the end of his third lifetime, with his fourth lifetime still far away.

He did not want to unwittingly provoke such a sinister fellow disciple.

And he was not the only True Person who thought this way.

Meanwhile, Lü Yang watched as the 【Heavenly Thunder】 in the Foundation Establishment realm gradually dissipated, and the Peak Master of Mending Heaven Peak turned into a pile of tribulation ashes.

A trace of regret lingered in his heart.

"What a pity, such excellent sword-sacrificing material."

Even Arhat Fulong felt the same.

Unfortunately, the mystical nature of the 【Abyss Sword】 required stacking through actual combat.

His strategy of winning without fighting did not count.

Otherwise, two mid-stage Foundation Establishment cultivators could have pushed the power of the 【Abyss Sword】 to a terrifying level!

Share to your friends

Tip: You can use left, right keyboard keys to browse between chapters.

Chapter 158: Actually, I Am a Good Person

[1,293 words]

Although the master of Mending Heaven Peak had already fallen due to a failed breakthrough, the gossip about his wife and children remained hot in the Primordial Saint Sect for several months.

Not to mention the True Persons, even the ordinary disciples were secretly discussing the rumors.

Especially when they saw Lü Yang visiting Mending Heaven Peak every few days, sometimes greeted personally by Madam Ruo Xiang or Chen Shuqian.

Because of this, most of the True Persons in the sect would curse under their breath, "Dog man and woman."

At the Sky-reaching Sea of Clouds, within Mending Heaven Peak.

"The appointment from Sacred Fire Cliff has already been issued." Lü Yang placed a decree on the table and sighed, "I was not appointed as the master of Mending Heaven Peak."

The status of the Four Inner Peaks in the sect was extremely high.

Even with Madam Ruo Xiang personally vouching for him, the sect could not possibly appoint a True Person who had never cultivated the Mending Heaven True Scripture as the peak master.

In the end, Madam Ruo Xiang became the peak master, while Lü Yang was given the position of guest elder.

In other words, Madam Ruo Xiang's previous promise had not been fulfilled.

At this thought, Lü Yang's anger immediately flared up, until a sensation like an electric current surged through his body, extinguishing his fury.

"Hu."

He lowered his eyelids, and his gaze happened to meet a pair of beautiful eyes like autumn water.

Even at this point, her dignified demeanor remained unchanged, and the slightly messy cloud-like hair only highlighted her charm even more.

"I'm sorry."

Madam Ruo Xiang apologized obediently.

A day later.

Lü Yang tidied his robes and ended his Dao discussion with Madam Ruo Xiang.

Although he was not fond of women, the cultivation techniques of Mending Heaven Peak could directly transmit knowledge and insights through dual cultivation.

For the sake of efficiency, he had no choice.

Right after, he saw Madam Ruo Xiang stretching her flawless, jade-like figure with satisfaction, while taking out a black-and-white decree and handing it to Lü Yang.

"This is called the Mending Heaven Decree, considered the token of the peak masters through the generations." Madam Ruo Xiang leaned on Lü Yang and said softly, "With

this decree and my guarantee, you are fully qualified to act as the peak master. This way, I am not considered to have gone back on my word, and you have just punished me as well."

Lü Yang looked at Madam Ruo Xiang with a half-smile.

No matter how much she said, it was only acting on behalf, not truly controlling Mending Heaven Peak.

If Madam Ruo Xiang ever changed her mind, she could take back the decree at any time.

This woman wanted to control him, afraid that he might really usurp her position?

But this was normal.

Where in the sect could true feelings be found?

Without holding some leverage over others, gaining trust was simply impossible.

Therefore, Lü Yang did not mind, letting himself fall into Madam Ruo Xiang's grasp.

As long as the benefits were his, it was enough.

Just then, a graceful figure suddenly appeared outside the door.

Though not as dignified and noble as Madam Ruo Xiang, she carried the unique vitality of youth.

"Senior Yuan Tu.!"

Chen Shuqian entered with a smile on her face.

But the moment she saw Madam Ruo Xiang beside Lü Yang, her smile quickly faded.

".It's you."

Although Lü Yang was present, the mother and daughter finally spoke openly.

Chen Shuqian had also realized that Madam Ruo Xiang did not intend to take her life.

That said, Madam Ruo Xiang had indeed treated her as a rival.

So the two still looked at each other with mutual disdain.

At this moment, looking at Madam Ruo Xiang, Chen Shuqian grew even more resentful.

Wasn't it just by relying on her looks that she latched onto Senior Yuan Tu?

We still have a long road ahead!

You are the peak master now, but who knows what the future holds!

A few days later, Lü Yang left Mending Heaven Peak.

As for most of the things in Mending Heaven Peak, he was actually not interested.

After all, he lacked neither spiritual treasures, nor pills, nor cultivation methods and divine abilities.

What truly caught his attention was only one thing.

"The successive peak masters of the Four Inner Peaks could carry the decree to Sacred Fire Cliff and read a Dao book written by a True Lord concerning seeking the Golden Core."

This was the true benefit!

Which Foundation Establishment True Person had not thought of seeking the Golden Core?

Who had not dreamt of ascending to that supreme position, becoming an unparalleled mighty figure who governed heaven and earth?

One must know, only in a place like the Primordial Saint Sect did methods for seeking the Golden Core exist.

If it were in the outside world, those sects and immortal clans that stopped at the Foundation Establishment Realm would truly have no path forward.

Seeking the Golden Core would be like a blind man groping an elephant, forcing generation after generation of cultivators to risk their lives in pursuit.

With these thoughts, Lü Yang flew straight toward Sacred Fire Cliff.

Along the way, he keenly noticed the gazes of many True Persons—some curious, some admiring, and some filled with fear—showing how high his popularity was now.

To this, Lü Yang could only sigh helplessly.

'The world has misunderstood me too deeply!'

Clearly, it was the peak master of Mending Heaven Peak who had acted against the people's will, losing their hearts.

That was why Madam Ruo Xiang, Chen Shuqian, and Chen Xin'an chose to side with me.

I merely accepted their plea for help and offered a little assistance.

Strictly speaking, I helped them escape from the clutches of the peak master.

As the saying goes, saving one life is better than building a seven-story pagoda; this should actually count as a good deed!

Thinking of this, even Lü Yang himself was a little moved.

Although on the surface, I appear to be a lawless, usurping, peerless demon.

I believe I am actually a good person!

At the Sky-reaching Sea of Clouds, Sacred Fire Cliff.

True Person Chong Guang sat cross-legged on a meditation cushion, looking at Lü Yang, who sat upright with a dignified and righteous appearance, with a strange expression in his eyes.

".You handled this matter well."

True Person Chong Guang spoke slowly, "With Madam Ruo Xiang personally vouching for you, the matter of Chen Taihe can be considered the internal affair of Mending Heaven Peak."

Lü Yang respectfully cupped his hands, "Thank you for your magnanimity, Martial Uncle."

"No need to be modest, your abilities are outstanding."

At this point, True Person Chong Guang looked at Lü Yang and, after a moment of thought, spoke in a low voice, "But you must remember, strength is the foundation of our sect."

"Do not neglect your cultivation by focusing too much on schemes."

"Disciple understands. This visit is precisely for that purpose."

Lü Yang nodded in agreement, then took out the decree given by Madam Ruo Xiang and handed it to True Person Chong Guang.

"Ruo Xiang knows her cultivation is lacking, so she specially entrusted me with this decree, allowing me to temporarily exercise the authority of the peak master. I wish to use this to read the Dao book of the True Lord, and I must trouble Martial Uncle."

"A trivial matter."

True Person Chong Guang smiled and nodded.

Although strictly speaking, Lü Yang was not the true peak master.

The so-called temporary authority was not entirely compliant.

However, who in the entire sect did not know about Lü Yang's relationship with Madam Ruo Xiang?

The two were so close they practically wore the same pair of pants.

So True Person Chong Guang did not bother to pursue this minor issue.

He immediately took the Mending Heaven Decree from Lü Yang's hand, then pointed with his finger, manifesting a beam of golden light.

Lü Yang stretched out his hand, and the golden light instantly condensed into a book in his palm.

Four large characters like dragon seals and phoenix scripts appeared on the cover:

『Observations on the Golden Core』 .

Share to your friends

Tip: You can use left, right keyboard keys to browse between chapters.

[1,564 words]

In the following month, Lü Yang still stayed in the Primordial Saint Sect.

As time passed, he simply stayed overnight at Mending Heaven Peak, either discussing Dao with Madam Ruo Xiang or listening to Chen Shuqian play the xiao, living quite a tasteful life.

Of course, these were only embellishments.

Lü Yang's body was like steel, and his Dao heart like iron; such fleeting romantic entanglements could not affect his determination.

Most of the time, he was still focused on studying the Dao book in his hands.

“Observing the Golden Core Edict... What a fine book this Observing the Golden Core Edict is!”

The True Person who authored this Dao book was titled 【True Person Ang Xiao Bi Ri】

.

He had refined the Golden Core and attained the 【Great Forest Wood】 , yet was considered the most disgraceful True Person in the history of the Primordial Saint Sect.

Because he had been a good person.

This was not an empty statement; at least during his tenure, he had never committed any malicious acts.

He even maintained private friendships with the Sword Pavilion, Dao Court, and Pure Land, with connections spread across the world.

“Although it is quite unbelievable, it is not entirely incomprehensible.”

“After all, what True Person, with nothing better to do, would write something like the Observing the Golden Core Edict, a book that teaches others how to seek the Golden Core?”

“Was he worried that after his reincarnation no one would fight him for the Fruit Position?”

“Being capable of such a deed, it’s not strange that he was a good person.”

At least if it were Lü Yang, he would never have done such a thing.

Daoist Hong Yun was a clear warning example—a dignified True Person, yet after reincarnation, he was utterly suppressed by True Person Chong Guang, a mere junior.

It was the height of frustration.

Shaking his head, Lü Yang dismissed these distracting thoughts and refocused his mind.

After a month of studying, this Observing the Golden Core Edict had indeed been of tremendous help to him.

It had almost pointed out the exact method to ascend the Foundation Establishment and seek the Golden Core.

“A towering skyscraper rises from the ground.”

“To seek the Golden Core, the foundation must be laid solidly during the early stage of Foundation Establishment.”

“Otherwise, if a mistake is made, there will be no chance to regret it by the mid-stage.”

The Observing the Golden Core Edict, written from the perspective of a True Person, described his views on the Fruit Positions of Heaven and Earth.

It also detailed the corresponding Ten Heavenly Stems and Twelve Earthly Branches.

He even annotated their attributes and divided them into the Five Elements, making their imagery much clearer and more vivid.

“In this lifetime, what I seek is **【Cheng Tou Tu】** , the Soil on the City Wall.”

What was **【Cheng Tou Tu】** ?

“To take the Heavenly Stem positions of **【Zhuo Yong】** and **【Tu Wei】** , and the Earthly Branch positions of **【She Ti Ge】** and **【Dan Yan】** .”

“Unite the four medicines into one, achieve the Great Dao, and only then can one seek **【Cheng Tou Tu】** .”

This was common knowledge yet extremely obscure and difficult to understand.

However, in the Observing the Golden Core Edict, this statement was explained much more clearly:

“In the Heavenly Stems, **【Zhuo Yong】** belongs to Yang Earth, and **【Tu Wei】** belongs to Yin Earth.”

“In the Earthly Branches, **【She Ti Ge】** belongs to Yang Wood, and **【Dan Yan】** belongs to Yin Wood.”

“When Yin and Yang Earth and Wood converge, it becomes **【Cheng Tou Tu】** .”

Holding the Dao book in his hands, Lü Yang already had an idea about the first Heavenly Stem and Earthly Branch he needed:

“I need a Heavenly Stem Qi that embodies **【Zhuo Yong】** .”

【Zhuo Yong】 was of the Earth element, occupying the Yang position, also known as 'Wu'.

This Heavenly Stem was said to be fog in the sky and mountain on the earth.

Before the chaos of Hong Meng was separated, it embraced unity and guarded the center.

After Heaven and Earth were divided, it carried all things and was the correct path of the Earth Dao.

Though it sounded simple, there were deeper mysteries within.

Because the Ten Heavenly Stems and Twelve Earthly Branches were never entirely separate.

Even the same Wu Earth Qi would change when converging with different Earthly Branches.

“For me, the best choice is Wu Earth Qi that merges with 【She Ti Ge】 or 【Dan Yan】 .”

“Only then will it remain true to the imagery of 【Cheng Tou Tu】 .”

“However, there are also unknown taboos in this.”

“When Wu Earth Qi merges with 【She Ti Ge】 , the resulting innate divine ability is called 【Bao Shou Shan】 , the Mountain Guardian.”

“The Observing the Golden Core Edict describes it as pure Yang Earth and Wood, capable of balancing all Qi and stabilizing Heaven and Earth.”

“However, when Wu Earth Qi merges with 【Dan Yan】 , the Observing the Golden Core Edict calls it a path to self-destruction.”

“Yin Wood overcomes Yang Earth. Once refined, you might as well wait to die a violent death.”

In other words, not all Heavenly Stems and Earthly Branches could be refined.

Some would lead to death if refined.

“...Damn it, all of them are traps!”

Lü Yang closed the Dao book and couldn't help but curse.

It was fortunate that a True Person had written this guidance, providing a complete method and theory.

Otherwise, who would think about all this?

If it were a rogue cultivator, just finding a Heavenly Stem or Earthly Branch would be a heavenly fortune.

They would definitely seize it and refine it without hesitation.

Who would care about taboos?

“No wonder only late Foundation Establishment cultivators are called Great True Persons.”

“It seems that those who reach late Foundation Establishment either have supreme luck or belong to a top Dao lineage.”

The former relies on chance, the latter on heritage.

“...Enough.”

Daydreaming was useless compared to action.

Lü Yang sighed, pushed aside Madam Ruo Xiang, changed his clothes, and walked out of the secluded chamber.

Thirty days had passed, and all preparations were complete.

Now that Arhat Fulong had been executed and the master of Mending Heaven Peak had died suddenly, he was free of worries.

He could now follow the guidance of fortune and seek his opportunity in peace.

However, at that moment, Lü Yang suddenly raised his eyebrows.

He immediately looked up and smiled slightly:

“Who is it, fellow Daoist?”

“Coming here in the dead of night and sneaking around, why not show yourself instead?”

As his voice fell, the night wind rustled.

Seeing Lü Yang remain calm, with his eyes locking firmly onto him, the intruder realized that Lü Yang had truly discovered him and was not merely bluffing.

“Hahaha, worthy of being Yuan Tu!”

The next moment, laughter rang out, and a formation suddenly descended from nowhere, trapping Lü Yang and the intruder inside, cutting them off from the outside world.

The whole operation was smooth and seamless.

Seeing this, Lü Yang narrowed his eyes at once.

Without saying a word, he immediately isolated information transmission, clearly showing he was experienced—most likely not his first time dealing with such situations.

Soon, a figure floated out gracefully.

The man wore black Daoist robes, with a fairly handsome face and calm demeanor, his face adorned with a kind smile.

“Inferior one is Wu Cang, greetings to fellow Daoist Yuan Tu.”

“So it is fellow Daoist Wu Cang.”

Lü Yang cupped his fists, while quickly recalling the man’s background in his mind.

This person was originally a rogue cultivator who had reached Foundation Establishment.

After reincarnation, he joined the Primordial Saint Sect and broke through to the mid-stage, thus washing away his rogue background to become a sect True Person.

“I wonder what business fellow Daoist Wu Cang has with me?”

As Lü Yang finished speaking, Wu Cang smiled:

“To be honest, I heard that fellow Daoist recently obtained a handwritten Dao book from True Person at Sacred Fire Cliff?”

“...That is true.”

Lü Yang immediately understood the other party’s intention and smiled:

“Could it be that fellow Daoist wishes to borrow the Dao book for a read?”

“That is not a problem.”

“What do you intend to exchange for it?”

“That is exactly the issue.”

Wu Cang maintained his smile:

“Unfortunately, I am currently short on resources and unable to offer any benefits.”

“However, I still wish to borrow the Dao book.”

“Would fellow Daoist be willing to extend me credit?”

As these words fell, Lü Yang’s smile quickly faded.

Both of them were sect True Persons—did he really expect him to fall for such nonsense?

Credit? What a freeloader!

Thinking this, Lü Yang’s gaze became even calmer, his tone laced with coldness:

“So fellow Daoist does not intend to make a proper transaction?”

Hearing this, Wu Cang sneered.

He certainly knew Yuan Tu was not easy to deal with, but that was only in terms of karma and calculations.

Now, by suddenly showing up, he gave Lü Yang no time to plot against him.

What could Lü Yang possibly do?

“Blame yourself for being greedy.”

“You’ve only just reached early Foundation Establishment and already taken over Mending Heaven Peak.”

“Yet you dare to borrow a True Person’s handwritten Dao book?”

“Tonight, I shall teach you a lesson.”

With that, Wu Cang stepped forward.

“A wise man submits to circumstances. Hand over the Dao book, and I will leave immediately.”

In an instant, the oppressive aura of a mid-Foundation Establishment cultivator bore down like Mount Tai, crushing onto Lü Yang.

“Or do you prefer to suffer a little before handing it over?”

Wu Cang had assumed Lü Yang would choose to compromise.

However, to his surprise, when Lü Yang felt the pressure, he actually smiled.

“If I am not mistaken, fellow Daoist has only refined one innate divine ability, correct?”

After speaking, Lü Yang seriously scrutinized Wu Cang.

His gaze, burning with desire and hunger, made Wu Cang instinctively frown:

“What do you mean by that?”

“I mean that fellow Daoist’s cultivation is quite good.”

Lü Yang lowered his hand, gripping the 【Abi Sword】 .

“How precious is a True Person’s handwritten Dao book?”

“Since fellow Daoist desires it so much, why not exchange it with your cultivation?”

Share to your friends

Tip: You can use left, right keyboard keys to browse between chapters.

[1,437 words]

Under the night sky, Lü Yang's gaze was cold and stern.

As soon as he finished speaking, without waiting for Wu Cang's reaction, he clasped his hands together to form a spell seal, releasing a beam of golden light.

‘How dare he!?’

In that instant, a flash of shock and anger appeared in Wu Cang's eyes.

He was at the mid-stage of Foundation Establishment!

A mere junior at the early stage of Foundation Establishment dared to take the initiative to attack him?

However, he had no time to ponder further.

As the golden light descended, in just the blink of an eye, he found himself enveloped in a vast sea of golden clouds.

Before his eyes were only the sun, moon, mountains, rivers, and lakes transformed from auspicious clouds, along with the illusory dragon-shaped light shadows weaving through them.

"Boom!"

The next second, without any hesitation, Wu Cang swung his sleeve, throwing out a small black-gold shield to protect his back, blocking the incoming sword light.

"Trying to ambush me?"

Wu Cang smiled smugly.

He had already spread his divine sense around, and Lü Yang was still within his formation.

How could he possibly be deceived?

However, before Wu Cang could finish his sentence, he saw Lü Yang, wielding the 【Abyssal Sword】 , suddenly burst into a dazzling white light.

Then, at the critical moment, he shifted positions again, instantly teleporting from behind to in front of him, the sword tip pointing directly at his forehead!

Clang clang——!

A loud explosion erupted between them.

At the crucial moment, Wu Cang opened a black umbrella, and Lü Yang's sword struck solidly on its surface.

Just as Wu Cang was about to counterattack, the white light flashed again.

By the time he reacted, Lü Yang had already pulled back, holding the 【Abyssal Sword】 in reverse, thoughtfully observing him.

'He does have some strength.'

If Wu Cang were still at the early stage of Foundation Establishment, he would have been injured by that strike.

However, his stronger divine sense at the mid-stage allowed him to evade Lü Yang's attack.

Of course, this was also because Lü Yang hadn't fully unleashed the power of the 【Abyssal Sword】 .

He could clearly feel the trembling of the sword in his hand, as the sword spirit girl excitedly shouted, "It's him! Kill him! An early-stage defeating a mid-stage, using him to sacrifice the sword can at least restore fifty percent of my power!"

"Don't rush, your time will come."

Lü Yang smiled leisurely, slinging the 【Abyssal Sword】 behind him.

Then, the vast sea of mana within him began to pour into it continuously.

However, this superior spiritual sword was indeed a gold-devouring beast.

No matter how much mana Lü Yang injected, the 【Abyssal Sword】 absorbed it all, with the sword spirit girl still shouting "Not enough!", like a bottomless abyss.

Of course, Lü Yang wasn't anxious.

After all, the more mana the 【Abyssal Sword】 absorbed and the longer it accumulated, the greater its power would be, making it a trump card that could determine victory.

More importantly, that previous strike confirmed one thing for him.

【Determine Intimacy】 could still be used!

Being able to use it meant he wasn't actually trapped by the opponent's formation.

With just a thought, he could escape, ensuring his safety.

With a retreat path secured, Lü Yang naturally became more composed.

He no longer needed to think about escaping but could instead use all his means to have a good fight with Wu Cang!

It was a perfect opportunity to test how much gap remained between him and the mid-stage of Foundation Establishment!

However, while he wasn't in a hurry, someone else was.

Wu Cang's face turned ashen, clearly not expecting that, despite his higher cultivation level, he was nearly injured by Lü Yang—a tremendous humiliation!

The next second, Lü Yang noticed that the formation surrounding him began to operate.

Countless branches descended instantly, blooming into thousands of flowers, merging with Wu Cang's own aura.

Eventually, they transformed into a towering, sky-reaching, universe-shading, winding giant tree!

"You court death!"

As he spoke, a branch of the giant tree bloomed and bore fruit.

In the blink of an eye, a fiery red, miniature fruit appeared.

Immediately, the fruit fell.

At the moment it fell, it transformed into a wave of scorching red light, flying out with a roar, accompanied by the continuous sound of thunder and lightning!

"Life-bound divine ability?"

Seeing this, Lü Yang raised his eyebrows.

While accumulating and maintaining the charge of the 【Abyssal Sword】 , he once again cast 【Determine Intimacy】 , intending to send the red light away.

However, this time the situation was different.

The previously always effective light of 【Determine Intimacy】 , upon touching the fiery red fruit, caused the fruit to explode with a circle of red light, blazing like flames.

With a loud bang, it shattered his divine ability and, in the blink of an eye, landed on him!

"Boom boom boom!"

In an instant, intense explosions and flames engulfed Lü Yang, with their power compressed by Wu Cang within a range of several hundred meters.

A Foundation Establishment cultivator's mana was like a dragon, capable of expanding or contracting freely.

When expanded, it could cover thousands of miles, crushing mountains and overturning peaks.

When contracted, it could maneuver within an inch, turning immense power into tiny sparks.

The latter could be even more powerful!

However, looking at Lü Yang, who was hit by the fiery red fruit, Wu Cang's face didn't show joy; instead, he frowned, looking towards the area filled with flames.

The next second, the flames dissipated.

Lü Yang's figure stood steadily amidst the flowing fire, forming a divine light with his hands.

Circles of light rippled from behind his head, resembling a canopy, firmly shielding him and isolating him from the flowing fire.

The two were distinctly separated, never able to affect each other.

【Differentiate the Same and the Different】 !

This divine ability not only avoided karma but was also a superior protective technique.

Once activated, all laws couldn't touch the body, and the qi became pure!

'Two profound mysteries.'

Wu Cang frowned deeply.

Although he had been mentally prepared, Lü Yang's display of profundity still startled him, making him no longer dare to underestimate Lü Yang.

It's important to know that life-bound divine abilities also varied in quality.

Generally, a life-bound divine ability would have only one profound mystery.

Those with multiple profound mysteries were either favored by fate or had superior cultivation methods.

As for Wu Cang, his apparent experience was quite similar to Lü Yang's.

Both had obtained the inheritance of a now-destroyed major sect, allowing them to rise rapidly.

Both had joined the Primordial Saint Sect by offering their sect's inheritance.

Therefore, although Wu Cang came from a loose cultivator background, his cultivation and combat power were not weak.

So, even though Wu Cang found it troublesome at the moment, he still remained confident.

'I have established the 【Coiling Dragon Divine Wood Foundation】 , cultivated the life-bound divine ability 【Coiling Dragon Treasure Fir Tree】 , and broke through to the mid-stage of Foundation Establishment, thereby refining three profound mysteries.'

'This Yuan Tu, could he possibly be stronger than me?'

With this thought, Wu Cang looked at Lü Yang again and smiled calmly, "Fellow Daoist Yuan Tu, this wood-born fire of mine is not so easy to deal with."

At this moment, although Lü Yang had protected himself with 【Differentiate the Same and the Different】 , the surrounding flowing fire hadn't dissipated.

Instead, it clung to him like a bone-attached maggot.

Once he stopped using the divine ability for protection, the flowing fire would immediately pounce, burning his dharma body.

Thus, he was trapped in a battle of attrition.

If Lü Yang continued to fight him while enduring the flowing fire, the mana consumption would be enormous.

Within a few rounds, he would exhaust his mana and be at Wu Cang's mercy.

That's why Wu Cang appeared so composed and smug.

But the next second, his expression changed.

Lü Yang, unhurriedly, took out a brocade bag from his sleeve and opened it.

Instantly, a sea of insects, covering the sky and sun, poured out.

Qi-devouring insects!

A total of 140 million Qi-devouring insects.

To store them, Lü Yang had specially refined a storage bag capable of sustaining living creatures, named the 【Centipede Wasp Bag】 .

At this moment, as the 【Centipede Wasp Bag】 opened, the Qi-devouring insects surged out like a tide, directly covering the flowing fire around Lü Yang and feasting upon it.

Although this flowing fire was transformed from Wu Cang's life-bound divine ability, it was ultimately formed from mana, one of the myriad qis.

And Qi-devouring insects consumed all qis!

In the blink of an eye, the flowing fire was completely devoured by the Qi-devouring insects!

Although nearly ten million sub-insects turned to ashes as a result, the Qi-devouring insect queen inside the Centipede Wasp Bag was still working overtime to breed.

This loss was negligible!

‘No wonder even the ancestors praised this extraterrestrial species!’

Seeing this, Lü Yang smiled with satisfaction.

It was worth the special trip to the secret realm of refining methods to cultivate this insect.

With a scale of over a hundred million, it truly possessed the power of a Foundation Establishment cultivator!

Share to your friends

Tip: You can use left, right keyboard keys to browse between chapters.

[1,495 words]

Sky-reaching Sea of Clouds, outside Mending Heaven Peak.

At first glance, the gloomy sky appeared empty, yet in reality, it was already filled with people in the Foundation Establishment Realm, with seven or eight True Persons lying in ambush among them.

“Yo? You’re here too?”

“Just joining the fun.”

“Together, together.”

Several True Persons of the Primordial Saint Sect stood together, chatting happily, each with an enthusiastic smile on their face, as if they were truly affectionate senior and junior brothers.

“How long has Wu Cang been inside?”

“About the time it takes for one incense stick to burn. A mid-stage against an early-stage, nothing unexpected should happen. The formation has also been set up. The moment he comes out, we’ll strike him down with a sap!”

“He has completely offended Yuan Tu this time.”

“Once Wu Cang grabs the item and comes out, we’ll snatch the True Monarch’s handwritten letter back. We’ll sneak a few glances at it during the process, and then throw all the karma onto Wu Cang.”

“If you ask me, this Wu Cang is far inferior to Yuan Tu. Though both entered under a master with some skills, Yuan Tu clearly obtained the true essence of our Saint Sect. Wu Cang, on the other hand, could never shed his rogue cultivator nature—vicious but not cunning. That’s about all he’ll amount to in this life. There are still long years of hardship ahead of him.”

The True Persons of the Primordial Saint Sect conversed casually, appearing extremely composed.

Obviously, Wu Cang thought his actions were secret, but how could they possibly escape the notice of those with keen intentions? It was just that everyone happened to need a scapegoat.

However, at that moment—

“Boom!”

A loud explosion sounded, and the True Persons in the Foundation Establishment Realm all raised their heads, only to see Mending Heaven Peak slightly trembling, faintly projecting a magnificent rainbow-colored light.

“He actually managed to stir up a commotion?”

Now, some of the True Persons of the Saint Sect were genuinely curious. “What’s Wu Cang doing? A mid-stage versus an early-stage, and he actually let the other party make noise?”

“Are rogue cultivators this pathetic?”

“Not necessarily. Although Wu Cang’s scheming is mediocre and he doesn’t understand manipulating karma, his combat skills are decent, at least at the level of a mid-stage cultivator.”

“So it’s not that he’s too weak?”

At these words, the True Persons present instantly fell silent, their expressions shifting as they looked toward Mending Heaven Peak again, now with added shock.

Meanwhile, inside Mending Heaven Peak.

Lü Yang held the 【Abyss Sword】 in reverse with one hand, still continuously channeling his mana, while his other hand activated a divine ability, uttering a Dao decree:

“Worms devour Qi, annihilate all intentions!”

【Discern Right and Wrong】 !

As the Dao decree fell, all the Qi-devouring insects received its blessing, their mortal bodies inexplicably gaining a hint of Foundation Establishment profundity, their power surging dramatically.

“Damn bugs!”

Seeing this, Wu Cang furrowed his brows tightly. He was not actually afraid of these Qi-devouring insects—what did fourteen hundred million matter? Even if he had to expend great mana to activate his innate divine ability, he could still wipe them out completely. But doing so would surely cost him significant mana and waste considerable time.

Thinking of this, he glanced once more at Lü Yang.

More precisely, he glanced at the 【Abyss Sword】 that Lü Yang held behind him in reverse, sensing from it a threat potent enough to kill.

‘Absolutely must not be delayed!’

In an instant, Wu Cang made his decision, forming a hand seal with one hand.

With that motion, his Dao Foundation, manifested as a towering tree, suddenly underwent a strange transformation—a tiny spark ignited at the treetop.

In the blink of an eye, the tiny spark turned into a raging wildfire!

The entire treetop transformed into a massive fireball, its crimson flames illuminating the sky, so intense that even the formation’s barrier could barely contain its brilliance!

“ 【Flee Not South】 !”

In an instant, life sprang from death, transforming the world into a furnace. Lü Yang, standing within it, even felt a burning pain mixed in his every breath.

‘An innate divine ability!’

Lü Yang’s Celestial Instrument at his brow spun, radiating divine light, and in that instant, he comprehended the nature of Wu Cang’s divine ability.

‘It’s very similar to Arhat Fulong’s 【Blazing Fire Dragon】 ... This is the Qi of the Heavenly Gang position 【Yan Feng】 , also known as ‘Jia Wood’, a pure Yang treasure tree.’

But Wu Cang and Arhat Fulong had their differences.

Arhat Fulong’s 【Blazing Fire Dragon】 was formed by the convergence of the Heavenly Gang 【Yan Feng】 and the Earth Fiend 【Zhi Xu】 , with the Heavenly Gang as the primary, essentially generating fire from earth and wood.

However, 【Flee Not South】 was different.

This innate divine ability was formed by the union of the Heavenly Gang 【Yan Feng】 and the Earth Fiend 【Dun Zhang】 , signifying: fire relies on wood to live, but when fire prospers, wood must burn!

The imagery of the divine ability perfectly complemented Wu Cang’s 【Coiling Dragon Divine Wood Dao Foundation】 . At this moment, he offered wood as fuel for fire, unleashing flames of utmost ferocity, known as the “Heavenly Furnace Departure Fire.” Any wood-based divine ability or magical treasure would be reduced to ashes beneath this flame.

Whoosh whoosh—!

Countless Qi-devouring insects were almost instantly incinerated by this flame, turning to ashes in large swaths, yet the overwhelming fire showed no signs of weakening.

With a flick of Wu Cang’s finger, the flames surged through the air!

Almost simultaneously, Wu Cang’s hand seal shifted again, and the 【Coiling Dragon Treasure Fir Tree】 behind him blossomed and bore fruit once more, producing one green and one gold fruit this time.

“Go!”

In the next moment, the two fruits dropped from the treasure tree, each giving rise to its own mystical power, combining with the “Heavenly Furnace Departure Fire” to target Lü Yang!

This was the three mysteries of Wu Cang’s innate divine ability 【Coiling Dragon Treasure Fir Tree】 : the red fruit called “Fire Within Wood,” capable of burning flesh and bone; the green fruit called “Coiling Peach Pit,” capable of binding form and restricting escape; the golden fruit called “Dragon Scale Seed,” capable of amplifying Qi and greatly enhancing the power of divine abilities.

An innate divine ability with three mysteries.

One for offense, one for control, and one for amplification, completely unrelated to karma or heavenly secrets, all focused on maximizing the killing power of divine abilities!

In an instant, the world displayed both brightness and darkness.

With Wu Cang as the dividing line, ahead was the “Heavenly Furnace Departure Fire” blazing through the clouds and sky, illuminating all directions like midday; behind was moonless, windy darkness like the dead of night.

Seeing this scene, Lü Yang finally sighed.

In the next second, the departure fire touched him!

Then, an unbelievable sight stunned Wu Cang—he saw Lü Yang flick his sleeve, his mana flowing seamlessly, actually flinging the flames away!

This response was beyond graceful.

The control over mana was refined to an indescribable degree, almost making Wu Cang gape in astonishment. He instinctively urged the flames to charge at Lü Yang again.

But once again, Lü Yang effortlessly flicked them aside.

‘How is this possible!?’

Unwilling to accept it, Wu Cang pushed the flames toward him once more, and this time, Lü Yang could no longer remain as composed as before—he was instantly engulfed in fire.

In an instant, Lü Yang was burned all over by the “Heavenly Furnace Departure Fire,” his flesh splitting open, revealing flawless white jade-like bones. His lungs and organs were soaked in flowing fire, burning through his viscera. Even his exhaled breath carried sparks. This strike had almost fatally wounded Lü Yang!

However, at that moment, a laugh echoed from within the flames.

“ . Heh!”

Amid the surging fire, Lü Yang raised his head, the corners of his mouth curving upward. His already burning eyes, like two suns, stared directly at Wu Cang.

The 【Abyss Sword】 in his hand trembled slightly.

From the start of the battle, this gold-devouring beast had been continuously consuming his mana, and only now did it finally show a hint of response, as if it was finally full.

Lü Yang looked up at Wu Cang and decreed: “Kill!”

【Discern Right and Wrong】 activated, as if in a grand hall where the emperor spoke, his words became law. Brilliant golden divine radiance instantly blessed the Abyss Sword.

In the next moment, Lü Yang already raised the 【Abyss Sword】 !

A blood-red light mixed with gold, splitting heaven and earth, separating Yin and Yang. The sky, illuminated by the departure fire, appearing as dawn and dusk, was suddenly cleaved apart by a single sword!

One Sword Cuts Dawn and Dusk!

This sword was not merely shattering the visible scene but struck directly at the spirit. The “Heavenly Furnace Departure Fire,” split by this sword, erupted with a loud bang before losing its mystical nature, instantly turning into ordinary fire and scattering away, revealing Wu Cang’s figure hidden behind the flames.

Wu Cang’s eyes were wide open, blood spurting from his mouth and nose.

And on his body, a clearly visible sword mark stretched across his waist and abdomen. As time passed, his flesh gradually split apart, and just like that, he was severed at the waist!

Share to your friends

Tip: You can use left, right keyboard keys to browse between chapters.

Chapter 162: Everything Has Its Cause

[1,645 words]

The 【Abyssal Sword】 , accumulated to its limit, displayed its true power at this moment, and the blood-colored sword light almost unstoppable, cut Wu Cang in half at the waist.

And it was not just a simple waist cut.

The sword light of the Abyssal Sword could only be described as ferocious, the sweeping force less like sword qi and more like a raging flood breaching a dam.

Therefore, after severing Wu Cang at the waist, the sword light did not stop at all but continued forward, directly blasting apart the formation Wu Cang used to seal the inside and outside, bursting out of Mending Heaven Peak, straight into the clouds, startling several Primordial Saint Sect True Persons who had been watching outside Mending Heaven Peak.

In an instant, the sky turned completely red.

Several Primordial Saint Sect True Persons stood within the Foundation Establishment Realm, looking toward the sword light from afar, but they could see nothing clearly and could only feel the destructive power surging within.

“What a 【Abyssal Sword】 !”

“Is this thing really this powerful? Were the previous sword masters not this fierce because they sacrificed the two True Persons from the Divine Martial Sect to the sword?”

“Incredible.”

The onlookers exchanged glances, all seeing the shock in each other's eyes, silently admitting that even if it had been them, facing that sword would have left them gravely injured.

If this had been a mid-Foundation Establishment cultivator, they would not have been surprised.

The same level of power had been displayed several times when the Master of Mending Heaven Peak faced heavenly tribulation and lightning strikes, and the power was even stronger compared to this.

But who was the Master of Mending Heaven Peak?

A mid-Foundation Establishment cultivator pushing toward late-stage, a True Person who stood out even among mid-stage cultivators, it was only natural for him to unleash such a strike.

But what about Lü Yang?

A mere early-Foundation Establishment cultivator, having only broken through less than a hundred years ago, yet he had unleashed such a terrifying sword strike—this strength was enough to make everyone take notice.

After a long while, the sword qi finally ceased.

At this moment, many True Persons inside and outside the Sect also reacted and turned their gazes toward the scene.

They saw that the Sky-reaching Sea of Clouds, which was usually shrouded in mist all year round, had a region where the clouds were completely cleared, revealing the towering land beneath the sea of clouds!

That was a sword scar!

If this had not been the Sky-reaching Sea of Clouds, and if Wu Cang had not absorbed most of the damage, this sword strike might have directly cleaved through thirty-six layers of protective clouds!

Under such circumstances, the scene inside Mending Heaven Peak could naturally no longer be hidden, and even Madam Ruo Xiang, Chen Shuqian, and Chen Xin'an were awakened, revealing their figures. For a moment, Mending Heaven Peak, which had already been a hot topic months ago, once again became the focus of all the True Persons of the Sect.

“Phew.”

Under the gaze of the crowd, Lü Yang calmly withdrew the Abyssal Sword that had been suspended in the air, then performed a spell gesture, releasing a divine radiance.

【Dissociation of Self and Other】 !

The divine light washed over his body, entering through his seven orifices and emerging from his organs, expelling the “Heavenly Furnace Leaving Fire” that had almost burned through his entire body.

Meanwhile, at the center of his brow, the Law Eye formed by the Celestial Instrument shone with treasure light, helping him locate all the subtle injuries and ensuring no hidden dangers remained.

In fact, the 【Celestial Instrument】 had also played a significant role in this battle.

Under its illumination, none of Wu Cang's actions escaped his perception, allowing him to anticipate every move.

Without the assistance of this supreme heavenly treasure, Lü Yang could not have grasped the timing so precisely, let alone carried the Leaving Fire head-on and severely wounded Wu Cang with a single sword strike.

Yet even so, Lü Yang had still not managed to kill Wu Cang.

In midair, the bisected Wu Cang dared not hesitate for even a moment. Without uttering a single harsh word, he transformed into a streak of escape light and vanished into the distance.

And Lü Yang, seeing this, did not give chase.

'Mid-Foundation Establishment... so strong, too strong. Challenging a higher realm is still a bit too much for me.'

This battle could be considered a mutual injury!

He had taken a full strike of the Heavenly Furnace Leaving Fire, with most of his Dharma Body burned through, while Wu Cang's Dharma Body had been severed at the waist, with his Dao Foundation also struck by the sword.

However, in the end, Lü Yang had gained the upper hand.

Because that final sword strike successfully triggered the 【Butcher of Men】 ability of the Abyssal Sword, and a crimson blood light now rippled along the sword's blade.

'Although I didn't manage to kill him, I wounded his Dharma Body in direct combat and even severed a small piece of his Dao Foundation. That was practically taking half his life. Moreover, it was a case of the weak defeating the strong, which barely met the criteria for 【Butcher of Men】 , allowing the Abyssal Sword's sword qi to improve significantly.'

Holding the Abyssal Sword, Lü Yang could clearly feel it.

Since Wu Cang's Dao Foundation was of the Wood element, and he had used the Abyssal Sword to break it, the next time he faced a similar divine ability, the Abyssal Sword would have the power to suppress it.

This was the wonder of 【Butcher of Men】 .

Any divine ability, Dao technique, or spiritual treasure—once defeated, the Abyssal Sword could form a suppressive concept against it, giving Lü Yang an absolute advantage in future battles.

Therefore, as long as the Abyssal Sword defeated enough opponents, it could suppress most divine abilities in the world, gaining an innate countering attribute. Whether cutting the Five Elements or anything else, even random sword swings could break all techniques.

‘As for these injuries, they’re nothing serious.’

Lü Yang exhaled deeply, igniting a cluster of 【Azure Luan Noon Fire】 in his heart, generating Yi Wood, nourishing all things, and quickly repairing his damaged Dharma Body.

At the same time, inside Sacred Fire Cliff.

A stream of light landed in a hidden meditation room, and a dignified True Person walked out, saying, “In the end, Lü Yang won, though it was a miserable victory.”

The latest chapter was first published on 69 Books!

The person’s appearance was none other than the young True Person named 【Tuan Xu】 , who had previously chatted confidently outside Mending Heaven Peak, claiming, “I can battle Lü Yang.”

Even after witnessing Lü Yang’s earth-shattering sword strike, although he was slightly startled, he still maintained his composure.

Soon, a figure appeared inside the hall.

As soon as this person appeared, the originally dim meditation room instantly lit up, and the flickering lamplight illuminated a chiseled, imposing face.

“Master, your prediction was accurate.”

True Person Tuan Xu hurriedly cupped his hands and said, “That Yuan Tu is indeed my great enemy. No wonder Uncle Chong Guang places so much importance on him.”

Though both were respected Foundation Establishment cultivators, Tuan Xu’s expression and demeanor showed not the slightest arrogance. He fully positioned himself in a lower stance because the person before him was 【Hong Ju】 , not only his master since his Qi Refining days but also one of the few Foundation Establishment peak experts in the Sect.

“As expected.”

Inside the meditation room, Hong Ju True Person leaned casually against the lamplight and spoke in an indifferent tone, “This boy has extraordinary fortune and likely carries a superior heavenly treasure.”

“Ordinary karmic methods cannot touch him.”

“If he hadn’t dared to blow up the eight-hundred-mile spiritual veins of Skeleton Mountain, leaving behind a hidden calamity, I wouldn’t have had the chance to use my methods on him.”

After speaking, Hong Ju True Person produced a book in his hand.

In the next moment, the book began to flip on its own, pages rustling, until it stopped on one page, revealing a line of black text:

【Wu Cang kills Lü Yang】 !

“This 【Fate-Linked Karma Rewriting Talisman Book】 was entrusted to me by True Lord before his reincarnation. It is a treasure of karmic rank, wondrous in countless ways, capable of altering karma and fortune.”

“Using this treasure, I have linked Wu Cang and that Yuan Tu’s karmic fates, annotating it with the word 【kill】 , setting their inevitable outcome.”

“From now on, regardless of the cause, the final result will only lead to this one outcome. Under the pull of fate, Yuan Tu is destined to die by Wu Cang’s hand in the future.”

After speaking, Hong Ju True Person regretfully shook his head:

“Unfortunately, this treasure consumes too much virtue and fortune, so it cannot be used carelessly. Otherwise, there’d be no need for such trouble; eliminating Chong Guang would be a simple task.”

“In any case, Master’s goal this time has been achieved.”

True Person Tuan Xu spoke softly, “It was entirely Wu Cang’s initiative; no one will suspect us. And that Yuan Tu, having suffered such a heavy blow, won’t be able to leave the Sect for at least ten years.”

“Once the time passes, his breakthrough to mid-Foundation Establishment will also be delayed.”

“And as long as he doesn’t break through to mid-stage, Uncle Chong Guang won’t be able to travel to that domain, nor ascend to seek the Golden Position, leaving an opportunity for Ancestor Hong Yun.”

“Hmm.”

Hong Ju True Person nodded slightly upon hearing this, “Although Wu Cang is a rogue cultivator, reckless and ignorant of karma, his divine abilities are still quite formidable.”

“Being struck by his Leaving Fire should be enough to keep that Yuan Tu stable for over ten years.”

“Even if Chong Guang intervenes to help him recover early, as long as their fates remain entangled, Wu Cang will eventually be used to eliminate that Yuan Tu.”

“As for Wu Cang... being a rogue cultivator with no background, if he dies afterward, so be it. Letting Chong Guang vent his anger on him would at least put him to good use.”

Share to your friends

Tip: You can use left, right keyboard keys to browse between chapters.

[1,538 words]

“Yuan Tu, are you alright?”

On Mending Heaven Peak, Madam Ruo Xiang ran toward Lü Yang with a panicked expression, her red lips slightly parted. At first glance, it seemed she was genuinely concerned about her beloved.

However, Lü Yang knew what she truly cared about.

“Don't worry, the True Person's handwritten note is unharmed.”

Lü Yang smiled faintly, then exhaled a breath of scorching fire: “Alright, let Shuqian assist me in cultivation. I need to recover from my injuries as soon as possible.”

“Hmm.”

Upon hearing this, Madam Ruo Xiang's charming face darkened slightly, but she quickly regained her radiant smile and stepped aside for Chen Shuqian.

Seeing this, Chen Shuqian was overjoyed. She immediately cast a provocative glance at Madam Ruo Xiang, then helped Lü Yang into the secret chamber. After all, compared to Lü Yang cultivating the "Azure Luan Noon Fire" alone, dual cultivation was more efficient, and the recovery speed was faster.

Ten days later.

Lü Yang pushed Chen Shuqian away, feeling refreshed, and changed into a new set of clothes. His body, previously burned inside and out by the "Heavenly Furnace Separation Fire," had mostly recovered.

In fact, it had become even more resilient than before.

Lü Yang wasn't surprised; physical cultivation often involved breaking and rebuilding. After suffering such severe injuries, it was natural to gain some benefits upon recovery.

However, he didn't specialize in physical cultivation.

The former Saint Thief was no longer useful in the current era, so even if his body became more robust, it only meant he could endure more attacks.

"This Azure Luan Noon Fire is quite useful."

Lü Yang sensed the changes within his body, his expression showing slight surprise. Previously, he thought it would take at least ten years to heal from these injuries.

Yet, with Chen Shuqian's unreserved assistance, he displayed an extraordinary physique.

In just ten days, he had mostly recovered. Meanwhile, Wu Cang, who was also severely injured, had probably just managed to reassemble his bisected body!

Thinking of this, Lü Yang frowned again.

"Something's not right."

The Heaven-Seeking Instrument between his brows activated, illuminating cause and effect. Although he still couldn't find the problem, Lü Yang felt a lingering shadow in his heart.

He couldn't shake the feeling that something was off with Wu Cang.

Although his actions were typical of a True Person with a rogue cultivator background, Lü Yang still felt his behavior was somewhat reckless.

Unfortunately, the Heaven-Seeking Instrument couldn't detect any flaws, so Lü Yang had to set it aside for now.

With the Book of a Hundred Lifetimes, regardless of any hidden manipulations or schemes, he could eventually uncover the truth and use it in the next life.

"For now, it's best to be cautious."

With a thought, Lü Yang secretly summoned a gentle breeze and gracefully landed on Sacred Fire Cliff. Soon, a formation spirit came to guide him inside.

Inside the grand hall, as soon as Lü Yang entered, he felt a piercing gaze fall upon him, filled with scrutiny. However, a surprised voice soon echoed in the hall, and Lü Yang looked up to see True Person Chong Guang looking at him with delight:

“Your injuries have healed?”

Lü Yang cupped his hands: “Master Uncle, I've mostly recovered. The gift left by the Mending Heaven Peak Master was quite effective, and I benefited greatly.”

“Hmm.”

Upon hearing this, True Person Chong Guang stroked his chin with a peculiar expression, seemingly realizing something: “Indeed, he intended to use it to resist heavenly lightning.”

The next moment, True Person Chong Guang snapped back to reality:

“I thought you'd have to recuperate for over a decade, but since you've recovered early, you can now seek out the Heavenly Gang Earth Fiend?”

“That is my intention.”

Lü Yang nodded: “I have absorbed the Divine Martial Sect's fortune, sensed the heavens and earth, and vaguely calculated that my opportunity lies overseas.”

“...Overseas?”

True Person Chong Guang frowned upon hearing this: “What a pity. If it were in Jiangbei, I could have directly retrieved that Heavenly Gang Earth Fiend for you.”

“However, if it's overseas, you'll have to get it yourself. Fortunately, you have deep fortune, protected by a treasure of destiny, making it hard for others to track you. You're also clever, so I'm not worried about your safety. Here, take this for protection.”

As he spoke, True Person Chong Guang took out a jade token.

Upon seeing the jade token, Lü Yang was stunned. He had seen it before! In a past life, the Mending Heaven Peak Master had used it to block a Golden Core sword aura!

“This item is called the 'Imperial Mandate Jade Token,' refined by a True Person.”

True Person Chong Guang handed the jade token to Lü Yang and said calmly: “Each of the four inner peaks' masters receives such a jade pendant for protection.”

“After Mending Heaven's death, his was reclaimed.”

“Now that you're acting as the peak master, I'll pass it to you. No matter what dangers you encounter overseas, this treasure might offer a sliver of hope.”

“Thank you, Master Uncle!”

Lü Yang gratefully accepted the item, understanding that True Person Chong Guang was further investing in him.

“Is there anything else you need?”

Seeing Lü Yang accept the jade token, True Person Chong Guang continued: “Better to be overprepared. The overseas regions are perilous and unpredictable, so let's equip you thoroughly.”

Without hesitation, Lü Yang said: “I would like to request a tribulation-avoiding secret technique, a protective magical treasure, and if possible, a spiritual treasure to replenish mana. Oh, and a spiritual treasure for escape, preferably one that can break formations and ensure escape, with superior quality.”

“Cough, cough, cough!”

Before Lü Yang could finish, True Person Chong Guang interrupted him, then said irritably: “Greedy! Do you think spiritual treasures are common?”

“But I have you, Master Uncle.”

Lü Yang smiled shamelessly: “With your cultivation and realm, spiritual treasures are at your fingertips. You wouldn't want your disciple to die overseas, right?”

True Person Chong Guang snorted coldly at his words but wasn't angry. After all, greed was typical for a True Person of the Saint Sect. After some thought, he took out three items.

Upon seeing them, Lü Yang was overjoyed: they were indeed prepared!?

“Don't get too excited. There's no superior spiritual treasure!”

Before Lü Yang could express his thanks, True Person Chong Guang spoke first: “Among these three, only one is a mid-grade spiritual treasure; the other two are low-grade.”

“Thank you, Master Uncle!”

Lü Yang didn't mind; as long as they were spiritual treasures, he gladly accepted them, immediately storing the three items and calculating their origins.

The mid-grade spiritual treasure was for escape, named the "Void Crossing Golden Boat." As the name suggests, it could traverse the void and, more importantly, navigate freely in the chaotic spiritual energy of overseas regions, clearly tailored for him by True Person Chong Guang.

The other two were the "Qixia Robe" and the "Primordial Guard Stone."

The former could produce a protective glow to block a fatal attack, while the latter could store mana for use in critical moments.

"For this journey, return quickly."

Seeing Lü Yang store the spiritual treasures, True Person Chong Guang nodded and finally instructed: "Return within twenty years; I have an important task for you."

"Understood, Master Uncle!"

Lü Yang nodded immediately, then left the hall, riding a light beam into the evening breeze, returning to Mending Heaven Peak, where he retracted Chen Xin'an into the banner.

Meanwhile, Madam Ruo Xiang and Chen Shuqian also emerged together.

"Yuan Tu? What's going on?"

"I have urgent matters and need to leave immediately." Lü Yang's resolve was firm, ignoring the pleading look in Madam Ruo Xiang's beautiful eyes.

"If anyone comes asking about me, just say I'm in closed-door cultivation and haven't emerged."

With that, Lü Yang turned away, concealing his cause and effect, riding a light beam to silently leave the Sky-reaching Sea of Clouds.

This time, he and Wu Cang had both suffered greatly, forming a deep enmity. Moreover, if his intuition was correct, Wu Cang likely had a manipulator behind him. Staying in the Sky-reaching Sea of Clouds was no longer safe. It was better to leave, escape the chessboard, and perhaps find a vast new world.

In other words, it was time to pack up and run!

At the same time, in a hidden cave dwelling.

Wu Cang painstakingly reassembled his body, looking at a bloody scar on his abdomen and a deep sword mark on his Dao foundation that still pained him.

“I was too reckless this time!”

He didn't know what came over him. Upon learning that Lü Yang possessed a True Person's handwritten note from the "Soaring Sky Obscuring Sun True Person," which perfectly matched his main cultivation of the "Coiling Dragon Divine Wood Dao Foundation," he became impulsive and rushed to seize it.

Now, thinking back, there was definitely something wrong!

Although he had a rogue cultivator background, Wu Cang was still a True Person of the Saint Sect. Perhaps not cunning, but after suffering many losses, he had developed coping strategies.

“This Sky-reaching Sea of Clouds is no longer safe!”

Wu Cang's thoughts raced, and he made a decision: “I'm severely injured now, and I can't guarantee that some True Person of the Saint Sect won't harbor ill intentions toward me.”

“No matter who's scheming against me, as long as I leave, they shouldn't be able to do anything.”

“No time to lose; I'll leave tonight!”

—But where to go?

Wu Cang frowned, pondering deeply. After a long time, his eyes lit up as if he had thought of a brilliant plan, clapping his hands: “Got it, I'll go overseas!”

Share to your friends

Tip: You can use left, right keyboard keys to browse between chapters.

Chapter 164: Overseas Scenery

[1,257 words]

On the vast sea, amidst endless gloomy clouds and mist, a dazzling golden ship pressed down the waves, traversing freely.

Regardless of the thunder in the sky or the waves in the sea, nothing could shake the ship in the slightest.

A mid-tier spiritual treasure: [Void-Crossing Golden Ship]!

This spiritual treasure bestowed by True Person Chong Guang was perfectly suited for the harsh spiritual energy environment overseas, slicing through waves with unmatched efficiency.

At the bow of the ship, Lü Yang stood with hands behind his back, gazing into the distance.

"Such violent spiritual energy."

With his cultivation, he could naturally discern that the boundless gloomy clouds and mist, along with the resulting waves and thunder, were manifestations of spiritual energy.

"Unlike the mainland, the spiritual energy overseas is extremely chaotic and violent. Ordinary cultivators can't even absorb it. This violent spiritual energy gives rise to even more violent weather phenomena. Combined with the natural environment of the sea, it forms an insurmountable boundary."

Not everyone could venture overseas.

The ten-thousand-mile thunderclouds formed by this violent spiritual energy were powerful enough to rival his Twelve Celestial Demon Tribulation Light and never ceased.

Being within them, even a cultivator at the peak of Qi Refining would face near-certain death.

Fortunately, these thunderclouds possessed power but lacked rank, so Foundation Establishment cultivators could still cross. Otherwise, even they wouldn't withstand it.

"My opportunity."

While calculating with his fingers, Lü Yang activated the Celestial Instrument, opening his third eye at the center of his forehead, releasing a golden divine light that quickly pointed him in the right direction.

At the end of the divine light, he saw a ship much smaller than the [Void-Crossing Golden Ship].

"An overseas cultivator?"

Upon seeing this, Lü Yang's eyes lit up.

Boom!

In the sky, countless golden serpents and thunderbolts; in the water, surging undercurrents and towering waves. A three-masted ship struggled under this immense natural force.

"Hold on! Hold on for me!"

At this moment, Chen Xinghai, the helmsman of the Qinghan Dragon Ship, stood at the stern, gripping the helm tightly, despairingly watching the roaring wind and waves around him.

He never imagined that what was supposed to be a routine shipwreck salvage operation at the border would, just as they were about to return, encounter the legendary "Ghost Cloud." The dragon ship couldn't evade in time and crashed directly into it. Since then, no matter how hard he tried, he couldn't find a way out.

Thinking of this, Chen Xinghai couldn't help but look up at the sky.

As a helmsman who lived by the sea, he had heard his father say that beyond the "Ghost Cloud" lay a paradise of gold.

At the time, he thought his father was talking nonsense.

Because no one who entered the "Ghost Cloud" ever returned alive. Wasn't that just a way to deceive children?

However, at this moment, Chen Xinghai sincerely hoped his father's words were true.

Hold on. As long as he could get through the "Ghost Cloud," he could survive. As for whether the other side was a paradise, he no longer cared.

Crack—

At this moment, an unsettling cracking sound reached Chen Xinghai's ears. Turning around, he saw a boatman looking at him with a mournful expression.

"Boss, we're doomed..."

"Shut up!"

Chen Xinghai also felt a bone-chilling cold, because at the stern, the [Sea Patrol Immortal Talisman] personally drawn by an Immortal Alliance cultivator had just

developed some cracks. The protective divine light that had been enveloping the entire dragon ship began to dim and was about to shatter.

Being within the "Ghost Cloud," once the talisman broke, the consequences would be unimaginable.

"Have the guest elder repair it!"

Chen Xinghai made a final effort. There was still a cultivator on his ship, hired at great expense from the Immortal Alliance. Perhaps he could repair the talisman.

However, when that guest elder appeared before him, Chen Xinghai's already slim hope was completely extinguished. At this moment, the cultivator had an incredibly relaxed smile on his face, his eyes vacant, as if his soul had flown away, unresponsive to the outside world.

"He's possessed!"

Seeing this, Chen Xinghai's heart sank. This was the most terrifying aspect of the "Ghost Cloud" and the origin of its name.

Legend had it that there was an unprecedented battle.

The entire cultivation world's powerful cultivators joined forces to fight the sudden appearance of extraterrestrial demons over the sea. Their battlefield turned the sky crimson, and the waves into a sea of blood.

In the end, the cultivators of the cultivation world achieved victory but paid a heavy price. The area shrouded by the "Ghost Cloud" was their former battlefield. The souls of the dead wandered within the dark clouds, transforming into thunderbolts like golden serpents. Their obsessions stirred the sea, creating never-ending giant waves.

The higher one's cultivation, the more susceptible they were to these souls.

Once deeply affected, one would fall into the memories of these souls, unable to extricate themselves. People at sea called this being "possessed."

At the same time, although the extraterrestrial demons were defeated, they were not exterminated.

Therefore, the surviving cultivators chose to set aside past grievances and stand together to constantly fight against the extraterrestrial demons, eventually forming the unified Immortal Alliance.

"Boss! What should we do!?"

A voice interrupted Chen Xinghai's escapist thoughts, pulling him back to reality, forcing him to face the desperate situation before him.

But what could he do?

He was just a sea dweller under the Immortal Alliance. Without the dragon ship, he would have been annihilated in the "Ghost Cloud" long ago.

Thinking of this, Chen Xinghai couldn't help but smile bitterly and collapsed to the ground. "No hope. Let's just wait for death."

"There's nothing to fear anymore."

After all, at this point, was there anything more terrifying than death?

Then he saw the "Ghost Cloud," which was supposed to be eternal, suddenly churn, followed by an infinite golden light tearing it apart.

Within the golden light, a massive ship crossed the void and arrived. The ship had thirty-six levels, each more imposing than the last, resembling thirty-six layers of firmament clouds. Within the "Ghost Cloud," it was like a towering divine mountain. Wherever it passed, the waves calmed, and even countless thunderbolts couldn't shake it.

Chen Xinghai blinked.

He was wrong. Something even more formidable came from the other side of the "Ghost Cloud"!

The next second, he, who had just been slumped on the ground, leaped up agilely and shouted toward the sky, "Immortal! Immortal, save me, Immortal!"

His plea received a response.

In an instant, Chen Xinghai felt the world spin. When he looked back again, the "Ghost Cloud" had become a distant backdrop.

Around him were calm waves and clear skies.

The towering golden ship had vanished without a trace.

Had he escaped?

For a moment, he even wondered if he had just had a terrifying dream, until he saw a handsome and elegant figure on the ship.

"Commoner Chen Xinghai pays respects to the master!"

Without any hesitation, Chen Xinghai ran up to Lü Yang, bowed, and said, "Thank you, master, for saving me from danger!"

Upon hearing this, Lü Yang raised an eyebrow.

He had saved Chen Xinghai mainly to inquire about his background, to gain some understanding of the overseas situation and avoid stumbling into trouble.

However, as soon as Chen Xinghai spoke, he noticed something was off.

'Same language?'

Different places had different languages and even dialects. This was entirely normal. As far as he knew, the vast Jiangbei region alone had dozens of dialects.

But the language spoken by Chen Xinghai was very standard, recognized as the "True Speech" by the Primordial Saint Sect, Sword Pavilion, Pure Land, and Dao Lineage, essentially the official language. This was clearly not something a typical overseas cultivator would possess. Either he had connections to the mainland.

Or the overseas force behind him had connections to the mainland!

Share to your friends

Tip: You can use left, right keyboard keys to browse between chapters.

[1,480 words]

"Saving a life is nothing but a lift of the hand."

Facing Chen Xinghai's gratitude, Lü Yang raised his hand slightly and showed a kind smile: "If you wish to repay me, just answer a few of my questions."

Having gone far across the sea, Lü Yang decided to improve his image a bit.

After all, the misunderstandings the True Persons in the Primordial Saint Sect had about him were just too deep.

No matter what he did, no one would believe he was actually a good person.

However, no one overseas knew him.

Taking this opportunity, Lü Yang felt he could properly improve his image, spread his good reputation, and satisfy his vanity a little.

After all, when he had just transmigrated over, he had also thought about becoming a young sword immortal who rode his sword through the azure skies, roaming freely across the world, and drawing his sword to help when encountering injustice.

Unfortunately, the world was unpredictable, and for the sake of survival, he had no choice but to go along with the Primordial Saint Sect's ways.

Fortunately, he had not changed his original intention, and his heart remained kind.

"Roar——!"

Just at that moment, a dark shadow appeared beneath the sea surface, and soon after, a white flood serpent emerged, letting out a sharp screech toward Lü Yang.

"Noisy."

Lü Yang frowned, and with just a glance, he instantly sliced the flood serpent in half.

In an instant, the serpent's blood dyed the sea red, and a foul stench rushed toward him.

However, with a sweep of Lü Yang's sleeve, the stench was instantly cleared away, and the serpent's corpse was casually thrown into the "Ghost Cloud" behind him.

Chen Xinghai saw this clearly.

The serpent, still not completely dead after being sliced in half, managed to let out one last sound before being struck directly by a myriad of lightning bolts.

In the blink of an eye, it turned into ashes and disappeared.

Damn, disposing of the body so decisively, could this man be a demonic cultivator?

Chen Xinghai couldn't help but swallow hard.

How could he dare to slack off?

He hurried forward and respectfully said: "Master, feel free to ask, this humble one will surely tell you everything he knows without hiding anything."

Seeing this, Lü Yang nodded in satisfaction: "What is this place?"

Upon hearing this, Chen Xinghai was stunned for a moment but dared not hesitate and immediately replied: "Reporting to Master, this place is the Chaotic Current Sea of our Biyang Cultivation World."

"Biyang... Cultivation?"

Lü Yang frowned slightly upon hearing this.

He intended to perform a divination but found it difficult to calculate clearly.

Looking at Chen Xinghai again, he had questions to ask but didn't know where to start.

Moreover, the other party might not answer honestly.

After all, Lü Yang had heard him secretly suspecting that he was a demonic cultivator just now.

How could such a trivial mortal's mental fluctuations escape his notice?

Although he wasn't the petty type, he didn't have time to question word by word and verify the truth.

"Hmm, it's better to perform a Soul Search."

With a thought, Lü Yang acted.

Chen Xinghai sensed something and immediately showed a look of terror.

However, Lü Yang's gaze had already pierced straight into his Sea of Consciousness.

To prevent any omissions, Lü Yang even split his divine sense to search the souls of everyone on the boat at this moment.

After all, with his Foundation Establishment True Person status, performing a Soul Search on a group of mortals was impossible to harm them.

At most, it would look unpleasant and might be considered cruel by some.

But in his view, this was efficient.

This did not prevent him from being a good person.

Very quickly, as Chen Xinghai's eyes turned white, Lü Yang completely grasped the information about this so-called "Biyang Cultivation World."

His expression grew increasingly astonished.

Biyang Cultivation World, ruled by the Immortal Alliance!

Five Elemental Spiritual Roots, Cultivation Techniques.

Qi Refining, Foundation Establishment, Golden Core.

"What!?"

In an instant, Lü Yang's hand trembled, and he instinctively took a step back, his eyes filled with shock.

What kind of joke was this?

This Biyang Cultivation World actually had Golden Core True Lords!?

More information surfaced as Lü Yang continued the Soul Search.

"Biyang Cultivation World consists of one hundred and eight large islands overseas."

"Although there are many sects and immortal clans, they all belong to a single force."

"The Immortal Alliance."

"And this Chen Xinghai is a sea folk under the Immortal Alliance, responsible for going out to sea to fish for spiritual fish and salvage sunken ships."

"This seems to have already become a super industry."

"Under the Immortal Alliance, there are millions of people like him, harvesting countless spiritual resources and materials from the sea every year."

The more Lü Yang learned, the more serious his expression became.

Because in Chen Xinghai's memory, he had even seen Golden Core True Lords.

And he knew that above the Golden Core True Lords, there were even more unfathomable big figures.

"Nascent Soul Dao Lords...?"

Thinking of this, Lü Yang felt even more horrified.

Although he could not fully confirm it yet, there might very well be a Nascent Soul Dao Lord in this Biyang Cultivation World!

The next second, Lü Yang's expression suddenly changed.

"That flood serpent... was it the Immortal Alliance's sea patrol spiritual beast?"

Lü Yang raised an eyebrow.

If it really belonged to someone, how could he not have seen it at a glance?

It was precisely because he had seen that it was wild that he acted to kill it.

However, he soon understood the whole story.

It turned out that the Biyang Cultivation World had no method to control spiritual beasts.

They couldn't plant slave seals in the spiritual beast's Sea of Consciousness.

So the spiritual beasts they raised were all tamed using mortal methods.

As a result, there were frequent incidents of spiritual beasts escaping.

Lü Yang was instantly speechless.

So it was because his level was too high that he momentarily misjudged?

"The more I look at this Biyang Cultivation World, the more wrong it seems."

The sea patrol spiritual beast had been killed.

The Immortal Alliance would surely respond.

Before long, patrol cultivators would arrive to investigate.

He couldn't afford to reveal himself easily.

Better to stabilize the situation first.

Thinking of this, Lü Yang immediately waved his hand toward Chen Xinghai and the others.

He directly erased their memories of encountering him, then concealed his presence.

Moments later, Chen Xinghai and the others regained consciousness.

Losing their memories, they naturally didn't know what had happened.

They only felt they had luckily escaped from the "Ghost Cloud," sighing in relief at their narrow escape.

Just then, a beam of spiritual light flew over from a distance.

Lü Yang glanced at it roughly.

The newcomer's cultivation was not high, only at the mid-stage of Qi Refining.

Even so, Lü Yang did not reveal himself but continued to hide.

The spiritual light approached and then dispersed, revealing a middle-aged man wearing a cloud-water Dao robe with a magical sword floating behind him, exuding a dignified presence.

The middle-aged man glanced around the surroundings, then looked at Chen Xinghai and the others below.

His brows slightly furrowed, showing a puzzled expression.

He spoke in a deep voice: "This sea's sea patrol spiritual beast was killed here. You are the sea folk of this area. Have you seen any suspicious persons passing by?"

Seeing this, Chen Xinghai quickly stepped forward and replied: "Reporting to Immortal Master, we have not seen anyone."

"Strange."

The middle-aged man fell silent upon hearing this.

Chen Xinghai, seeing this, showed a struggling expression.

After hesitating for a long time, he finally mustered up the courage, stepped forward, and whispered:

"Immortal Master, look at my ship..."

"Hmm?" The middle-aged man glanced at Chen Xinghai and then at his ship.

"Severely damaged. Repairs will likely require a large sum of money."

"Exactly."

Chen Xinghai let out a bitter laugh: "Immortal Master, before I went to sea, I bought the Immortal Alliance's natural disaster insurance. Look at my ship, can the Immortal Alliance compensate for the repairs?"

As soon as these words were spoken, the middle-aged man's expression changed.

"Natural disaster insurance?"

"Your ship looks like it was struck by heavenly lightning, likely having entered the Ghost Cloud by mistake but not deeply, and you were lucky enough to get out, right?"

"But you, a mere sea folk, why did you venture into such a dangerous place as the Ghost Cloud?"

Chen Xinghai quickly explained: "The Ghost Cloud moved!"

"Do you have evidence?"

Chen Xinghai was instantly speechless.

How could there be any evidence for the Ghost Cloud's movement?

Even if there was, it wasn't something a mere sea folk like him could produce.

"No evidence means it's just your word."

The middle-aged man shook his head and said calmly: "Sorry, for now, you seem to have insurance fraud suspicion, so the Immortal Alliance will not compensate you."

"But I can recommend a friend of mine."

"He's a cultivator at the Immortal Alliance's shipyard and takes on private ship repairs on the side."

"If you go to him and mention my name, you can get a twenty percent discount on the down payment, and you can pay off the rest over ten years with low interest. It's very cost-effective."

In the shadows, Lü Yang's expression grew stranger the more he listened.

This Immortal Alliance... something feels off.

Why does this style feel so familiar?

Share to your friends

Tip: You can use left, right keyboard keys to browse between chapters.

[1,629 words]

Chen Xinghai ultimately had no choice but to accept reality.

In his view, he was just unlucky this time, encountering an accident that was not covered by the Immortal Alliance's insurance.

However, for Lü Yang, who had experienced countless battles in the Primordial Saint Sect, this little trick of the Immortal Alliance was something he could see through at a glance, and it was not surprising at all.

“This so-called natural disaster insurance of the Immortal Alliance only covers marine disasters but not ghost clouds.”

“Yet, there are talismanic protections on the ship, making ordinary marine disasters powerless against it.”

This created a paradox.

You encountered a ghost cloud?

Why would a sailor like you venture into a ghost cloud?

Did the ghost cloud come to you on its own?

Where is the evidence?

No evidence?

Then you are committing insurance fraud.

You encountered a marine disaster?

Why was a marine disaster able to break through the ship’s talismanic protection?

That is clearly unreasonable, and you are still suspected of insurance fraud.

Don’t ask.

If you ask, they will simply refuse to compensate.

Of course, the Immortal Alliance would not be so blatant.

Lü Yang estimated that the Immortal Alliance probably paid compensation to a group of people every year and then heavily promoted it.

This style was all too familiar to Lü Yang.

For people like Chen Xinghai, and the millions of other sailors, the Immortal Alliance treated them like crops to be harvested from time to time.

After learning this mechanism, Lü Yang’s mind spun quickly, and he even came up with ways to further exploit it.

So far, the natural disaster insurance provided by the Immortal Alliance was extremely expensive.

Only a boat owner like Chen Xinghai, who had a large ship, could afford it.

The boatmen on the ship did not need to buy insurance at all, which was clearly wasting manpower.

In Lü Yang's opinion, the Immortal Alliance could completely launch personal insurance for sailors to report their safety.

Of course, very few people would buy this kind of insurance.

After all, for sailors, surviving at sea was already a one-in-ten-thousand chance.

One careless mistake could result in being swallowed by the sea.

Even if they bought personal insurance, if they died, they would not receive any compensation.

Therefore, to promote sales, they could spread rumors that while personal insurance might seem useless, not buying it could result in being dispatched by the Immortal Alliance to dangerous sea regions.

Wouldn't that boost sales?

In fact, this wasn't even Lü Yang's original idea.

On the battlefield between the righteous and demonic sects, there had once been a True Person from the Primordial Saint Sect who had done the same thing and made a fortune afterward.

Returning to his thoughts, Lü Yang looked again at the middle-aged man.

He waited patiently until the man finished talking with Chen Xinghai and flew away on his light escape before secretly following him.

After confirming that there was no one else within a thousand miles, Lü Yang made his move.

With a single grab, he instantly performed a soul search.

Chen Xinghai, being a low-level sailor, did not know much.

However, as a patrolling sea emissary of the Immortal Alliance, the middle-aged man was sure to know more useful information.

Under Lü Yang's soul search, more information was unearthed.

"This place is the northwestern corner of the Chaotic Current Sea. The corresponding Immortal Alliance port is currently under the control of the 'Divine Firmament Sect', which even has a Foundation Establishment elder overseeing it."

Seeing this, Lü Yang gasped sharply.

What kind of Divine Firmament Sect was this?

Its strength could actually rival that of the top sects beneath the Primordial Saint Sect in the Jiangbei region, having a Foundation Establishment True Lord overseeing it!

Although the memories were somewhat vague, referring to the elder as a Foundation Establishment ancestor, the core was still the same: a Golden Core cultivator.

Overseas and inland had different naming conventions, which was normal.

The only pity was that this person did not possess the complete inheritance of the 'Divine Firmament Sect' and only had the Qi Refining portion of the cultivation method.

"This person is named Situ Zheng, with cultivation at the Qi Refining... huh?"

At this point in the soul search, Lü Yang was suddenly stunned because in Situ Zheng's memory, the so-called 'Qi Refining' actually had twelve layers!

"Why are there two extra layers?"

Lü Yang frowned deeply and decisively extracted the cultivation method from the man's mind.

Fortunately, the opponent's sea of consciousness did not have any defensive restrictions.

Soon, a cultivation method appeared before Lü Yang's eyes.

『Ocean Treading Art』

"To successfully cultivate this method, one must possess a Water Spiritual Root and use the root to absorb seawater, thereby refining true Qi, and after twelve cycles, one can reach Foundation Establishment."

As he read, Lü Yang gradually furrowed his brows.

According to the description in the cultivation method, only those born with spiritual roots could cultivate immortality.

This completely contradicted the common knowledge he had formed over the past century.

The difficulty of cultivation lay in the journey, but the entry itself was extremely easy.

As long as one was human, they could cultivate.

How could there be a distinction based on spiritual roots?

Not to mention the content of the 『Ocean Treading Art』, which used the spiritual root to absorb seawater.

What about the cultivator themselves?

Was this Qi Refining or Root Refining?

The more Lü Yang read, the more he felt something was wrong.

Especially after witnessing the behavior of the Immortal Alliance just now, he couldn't help but become suspicious.

Could this so-called Biyang Cultivation World be a large-scale talent training base secretly established overseas by the Primordial Saint Sect?

With this thought, Lü Yang once again concealed his figure.

At the same time, he erased the memory of Situ Zheng seeing him.

He then took out the Myriad Spirits Banner and summoned Su Nu.

“Your servant greets Master.”

As soon as Su Nu appeared, she bowed gracefully.

She looked at Lü Yang with a hint of grievance, as if questioning why he had kept her sealed for so long without letting her out for some fresh air.

Lü Yang ignored her gaze and pointed at Situ Zheng.

“Follow him.”

The background of this ‘Divine Firmament Sect’ was unclear.

If there really was a Golden Core True Lord, it would be too dangerous for Lü Yang to follow personally.

Playing it safe was the better choice.

Let Su Nu scout ahead first.

“Your servant obeys.”

Su Nu asked no further questions, seemingly accustomed to being used as a tool by her master.

She immediately transformed into a breeze and followed behind Situ Zheng.

Situ Zheng remained completely unaware and continued flying on his light escape.

Before long, the clouds parted and the fog dispersed.

In Lü Yang’s vision, a vast and boundless island suddenly appeared.

Spiritual light surged on the island, and cultivators could be seen at every moment.

Situ Zheng flew all the way into the island and soon arrived in front of a pavilion.

Along the way, several cultivators greeted him.

However, they were all minor Qi Refining cultivators and naturally failed to notice Su Nu standing right beside him.

Next, Su Nu followed Situ Zheng around the island, searching and observing.

However, the more Lü Yang watched, the more he frowned.

“Why are they all at the Qi Refining stage?”

Through Su Nu’s perspective, Lü Yang had already grasped most of the situation on the island.

Yet, he found that there was not a single Foundation Establishment True Person on the island.

Where had the Foundation Establishment cultivators gone?

Just as Lü Yang was puzzled, the entire island suddenly trembled violently.

Immediately after, beams of spiritual light shot into the sky, forming a grand formation.

Soon after, countless figures appeared outside the island.

“Hahaha! Today shall be the day of your Divine Firmament Sect’s extermination!”

Among the crowd, the leader’s aura was immense, stirring the surrounding spiritual energy.

At a glance, Lü Yang judged that the person’s cultivation was around the late stage of Qi Refining.

Are you insane?

Lü Yang was utterly baffled.

The Divine Firmament Sect supposedly had a Golden Core True Lord overseeing it.

How could someone at the late stage of Qi Refining dare to shout about exterminating them at their doorstep?

However, Lü Yang quickly thought of the example of the Divine Martial Sect.

Didn’t the Divine Martial Sect suffer the same fate?

Its late Foundation Establishment Sect Master was lured away by True Person Yinshan, ambushed, and killed, resulting in the near destruction of the Divine Martial Sect.

In the end, Lü Yang himself wiped them out.

Perhaps the Divine Firmament Sect had encountered a similar situation?

That would explain why there were no Foundation Establishment True Persons left on the island.

At this moment, a beam of spiritual light shot up from a palace in the center of the island.

The cultivation was also at the late stage of Qi Refining, and the voice boomed:

“Qing Thunder Sect, your ambitions are boundless! Are you trying to violate the laws of the Immortal Alliance?”

As the voice fell, dozens to hundreds of beams of spiritual light rose from the island.

Lü Yang took a quick glance.

They were all mid-stage Qi Refining cultivators.

They looked imposing but were actually fragile, merely putting on a show.

“This might be my chance!”

In his view, the Divine Firmament Sect must have fallen into a crisis.

Most of its Foundation Establishment cultivators were likely dead.

But he did not believe they were completely wiped out.

After all, two had escaped from the Divine Martial Sect.

At most, they were seriously injured and temporarily hiding.

“If I help the Divine Firmament Sect now, I might be able to connect with the True Lord or True Person behind them.”

“This will surely be a great help in my search for the Heavenly Astral.”

Of course, Lü Yang would not act personally.

After all, if the Qing Thunder Sect dared to challenge the Divine Firmament Sect with a Golden Core True Lord, they likely had one themselves.

The risk of him taking action was far too great.

In comparison, Su Nu, as a spirit of the banner, was untraceable by cause and effect and could even self-destruct.

She was the perfect choice.

With this in mind, Lü Yang immediately made his decision.

Su Nu would have to suffer once again.

She would bear the karma.

Share to your friends

Tip: You can use left, right keyboard keys to browse between chapters.

Chapter 167: This Damn Thing Is a Nascent Soul!?

[1,467 words]

Above the island, the two groups were still locked in a standoff.

The leader of the Divine Firmament Sect was a Daoist nun in a robe, graceful and elegant, her fair face now filled with murderous intent as she glared ahead.

Opposing them was the Azure Thunder Sect, led by a white-browed old Daoist who appeared otherworldly.

He held a turquoise-blue magic orb in his hand and sneered, "Madam Xiao, who in this entire stretch of the Chaotic Sea doesn't know your sect master is dead, leaving only you in the Divine Firmament Sect?"

"Today, no one can save you!"

"You should know that the Divine Firmament Sect was founded by a traitor from our Azure Thunder Sect. You've had your way for long enough. It's time to return to the source!"

As his words fell, the people behind him echoed loudly.

Madam Xiao's delicate face flushed red with fury, her chest heaving violently. "Shameless! It was your Azure Thunder Sect that split from my Divine Firmament Sect!"

"It's only because my Divine Firmament Sect has declined that you've managed to take advantage."

"Traitors who betrayed their master and ancestors! Now that you've gained some power, you want to destroy my Divine Firmament Sect? Do you really think my Guishui Divine Firmament Grand Formation is just for show?"

As her words ended, Madam Xiao immediately formed hand seals.

In an instant, the sky roared with the sound of rushing water as layers of formation light intertwined, eventually manifesting into a boundless sea!

The seawater churned in mid-air, real yet illusory, continuously surging with waves. On closer inspection, every stream of water was actually leaping arcs of lightning, their rumbling thunder merging with the crashing waves, causing the mortals below to tremble as if facing heavenly wrath.

"What a magnificent Guishui Divine Firmament Grand Formation."

Seeing this, the white-browed elder's expression immediately turned wary, though greed burned even stronger in his eyes. A cold smirk soon curled on his lips.

".What a pity, attack!"

With a shout, the grand formation, which had nearly fully activated, suddenly stalled. One of the formation's core nodes quickly dimmed.

Madam Xiao's pupils shrank in shock.

She turned in disbelief toward one of the key formation controllers below. "Junior Brother Liu, you've colluded with the Azure Thunder Sect and betrayed the sect!?"

The saboteur was none other than her junior brother, Liu Chi.

When their master had accepted him as a disciple, he had praised him as the future hope of the Divine Firmament Sect's revival, treating him with utmost care and effort.

Yet now, at the sect's moment of crisis,

He had chosen to disable the sect's defensive grand formation and become the first to betray them!

"The Azure Thunder Sect is the true lineage of the Divine Firmament. How is this betrayal?"

A scholarly-looking man stepped forward leisurely, spouting nonsense, deliberately making sure the claim that "Azure Thunder Sect is the true lineage" echoed in all directions.

This had always been part of his deal with the Azure Thunder Sect.

Originally, he had joined the Divine Firmament Sect because of its long heritage and profound Dao techniques. But as time passed, he grew increasingly discontent.

Because the Divine Firmament Sect was in decline.

Especially after Madam Xiao's master, the renowned Nascent Soul cultivator, went missing, the sect seemed to him like a sinking ship.

With his talent as a mutant lightning spiritual root, how could he stay on a sinking ship until death? A wise bird chooses a good tree to nest in; naturally, he had to seek another path.

"Hahaha! Well done!"

At that moment, the white-browed elder burst into laughter. "Liu Chi, rest assured. After today, you shall be an elder of my Azure Thunder Sect. Now, all of you, follow me..."

Before he could finish uttering the word "kill," his voice abruptly stopped.

A stunning woman with a graceful figure and breathtaking beauty suddenly appeared before him, her autumn-water-like eyes casually glancing at him.

With just that single glance, the elder's expression froze on the spot. Cracks rapidly spread across his body.

Boom!

With an explosion, his spiritual energy collapsed, and he perished without a trace.

"A few late-stage Qi Refining cultivators, stop wasting words here. Let someone who can actually make decisions step forward. Where is your sect's True Person?"

Lü Yang, possessing Su Nu with his divine sense, spoke calmly.

At the same time, he decided in his heart that if more than three Foundation Establishment True Persons appeared, he would immediately detonate Su Nu and flee to avoid major karmic entanglements.

However, he quickly realized that the crowd's reaction was off.

"Elder... Elder..."

"The elder was killed by that cultivator!"

"Who is he?"

The disciples of the Azure Thunder Sect stared wide-eyed in shock, seemingly unable to believe what had just happened.

"Y-You're finished!" Finally, one disciple snapped out of it, pointing at Lü Yang and shouting angrily, "The elder was the favorite disciple of the Azure Thunder Patriarch and an outer elder appointed by the Immortal Alliance. You killed him! From now on, the Immortal Alliance and the Azure Thunder Patriarch will be your mortal enemies!"

Killing was done by Su Nu. What does it have to do with me?

Lü Yang remained utterly unflustered. Instead, he focused on another part of the disciple's words. "Azure Thunder Patriarch? Could that be the Golden Core True Monarch of the Azure Thunder Sect?"

At that moment, a voice suddenly rang out:

"Who dares kill my beloved disciple!?"

The voice rumbled like raging waves through the air, spreading from hundreds of miles away. Soon, a figure composed entirely of true Qi flew toward them at high speed.

Such momentum, even without approaching yet, caused the entire island to tremble slightly.

Madam Xiao's expression turned utterly despairing. If it had been only the white-browed elder, she still had the confidence to fight with the support of the Guishui Divine Firmament Grand Formation.

But even with the formation, she stood no chance against the Nascent Soul Azure Thunder Patriarch!

Could this really be the end of the Divine Firmament Sect?

In the next moment, the figure arrived, instantly locking its gaze on Lü Yang. Without a word, it unleashed a vast, ocean-like torrent of water-light.

Lü Yang took one look and immediately laughed.

“Peak Qi Refining? I'll give you points for courage!”

With that, Lü Yang casually grabbed the figure as if lifting a dead dog, then turned back to face the Azure Thunder Sect disciples:

“Stop sending these small fry. Where are your Foundation Establishment True Persons?”

The response was a series of dazed stares.

“Azure Thunder Patriarch... This is impossible!”

“He subdued the Patriarch with one hand!?”

For a moment, several Azure Thunder Sect disciples fell to their knees in mid-air, their expressions a mix of tears and laughter, as if unable to accept reality.

Seeing this, Lü Yang finally realized something was off.

He looked at the so-called peak Qi Refining cultivator in his hand, who was now trembling in fear and hurriedly begged for mercy before Lü Yang could speak:

“Esteemed superior, spare me! This humble one, Qing Ting, greets the superior!”

Lü Yang opened his mouth slightly and asked in a low voice, “...You are Qing Ting? The Azure Thunder Sect's Patriarch?”

“Yes, yes. May I ask if the superior has any questions?”

Big questions, actually!

Lü Yang wore an utterly baffled expression. “Isn’t the Azure Thunder Sect a Golden Core sect?”

Hearing this, the Azure Thunder Patriarch quickly shook his head. “Superior, you’re mistaken.”

Oh? A misunderstanding? Then that’s less surprising.

In the next second, the Azure Thunder Patriarch spoke with some pride, “This humble one has successfully condensed a Nascent Soul not long ago. The Azure Thunder Sect is now a Nascent Soul sect!”

“...Nascent Soul? You?”

Only then did Lü Yang notice that this fellow in his hand had no physical body at all, his entire form composed of true Qi, with a glowing root-like core at the center.

You call this a Nascent Soul?

Though Lü Yang had never actually seen a Dao Lord before, he had heard True Person Chong Guang mention it in passing, and he remembered it well.

A Nascent Soul is the true essence of Wuji, the essence of Two and Five, gathering the primordial energy of Heaven and Earth, merging Yin and Yang, connecting with the universe, comprehending the wondrous Dao, and nurturing the essence of life. The essence of Two and Five refers to human nature, while the true Wuji essence refers to human destiny. Only when these two are perfectly combined does a Nascent Soul emerge.

Yet the thing in his hand—if one were to put it bluntly—was just a high-quality strand of true Qi shaped like an infant!

This is supposed to be a Nascent Soul?

“I almost fell for your trick!”

Lü Yang’s expression shifted as he carefully scrutinized the Azure Thunder Patriarch in his hand. Suddenly, his brows twitched slightly because he found this state somewhat familiar.

It possessed consciousness but was essentially just true Qi.

“...Innate One Qi!?”

In an instant, Lü Yang’s expression turned suspicious and uncertain.

Innate One Qi—wasn’t that the signature technique of the original owner of the Myriad Spirit Banner, the very Innate True Person who created the 『Innate Dao Book』 ?

Share to your friends

Tip: You can use left, right keyboard keys to browse between chapters.

Chapter 168: The Cultivation System of the Cultivation World

[1,492 words]

At this moment, the entire island fell into silence.

Lü Yang floated in midair, lost in thought, without saying a word, while the others did not even dare to breathe, with some even fainting from fright.

After all, just moments ago, the renowned Ancestor Qing Ting, famous across several surrounding islands, had been lifted by this fearsome demon like one would lift a dead dog.

One must know that Ancestor Qing Ting was a great cultivator of the Nascent Soul Realm, a mid-level figure even in the Immortal Alliance, yet he was utterly powerless before this man.

What realm had he reached?

Spirit Refining? Void Return? Dao Integration?

No one knew, but everyone understood that Lü Yang could decide their life or death with just a single thought.

“.Eh.”

After a long while, Lü Yang let out a deep sigh.

Naturally, the thoughts and intentions of these mortals below could not escape his perception; he had seen through them all.

"Being a good person is truly difficult."

"I clearly intended to be a good person this time, yet just because of a small mishap, I've once again become the great demon who exterminates entire sects at the slightest provocation."

Thinking of this, Lü Yang glanced once more at the Ancestor Qing Ting in his hand.

"This is all your fault!"

He had originally planned everything carefully—kill a few Qi Refining cultivators to demonstrate his strength, then negotiate with a Foundation Establishment cultivator, giving everyone a chance to save face.

In this way, he could establish his reputation overseas as a benevolent protector, and at the same time preserve the "Golden Core Sect."

There would surely be considerable benefits afterward.

He had even considered using a bitter ploy to make the "Golden Core Sect" owe him a favor, preparing for future opportunities.

As for the dead Qi Refining cultivators, Lü Yang had never cared about them.

Were Qi Refining cultivators even considered human?

However, who could have expected that a misleading name for a realm would ruin all these plans, turning him back into a great demon in an instant!

'Should I just kill them all...'

Lü Yang glanced around at the people nearby.

Then, a shiver ran down his spine.

How could he have such a terrifying thought?

Would killing them all really silence the news?

It was utterly meaningless!

'It must be the fault of the Primordial Saint Sect. Staying too long in such a place corrupts the mind...'

Lü Yang reflected deeply.

He then snapped back to his senses and turned to look at the trembling Lady Xiao behind him.

"From today onward, the Shenxiao Sect will be under my control."

"Do you have any objections?"

How would Lady Xiao dare to object?

She immediately prostrated herself, her delicate body trembling slightly, creating ripples.

"The Shenxiao Sect will obey senior's every command."

Seeing this, Lü Yang gazed deeply at her.

His Dharma Eyes were like torches, as if a blaze of fire surged through Lady Xiao's entire body, making her fair face flush with two rosy patches.

She felt as if she had no secrets before Lü Yang.

"Senior, your divine might is unparalleled!"

At this moment, a figure suddenly rushed out and knelt before Lü Yang without a second word.

It was none other than Liu Chi, who had just betrayed the Shenxiao Sect.

"This junior possesses a mutated Lightning Spiritual Root, a top-grade talent."

"Today, I wish to take senior as my master, to serve you faithfully and without hesitation, willing to die if needed!"

As soon as he finished speaking, Liu Chi respectfully kowtowed three times, his head striking the ground loudly.

However, upon seeing this, Lady Xiao suddenly raised her head, her face filled with intense hatred.

"Traitor who betrays master and sect... do you really think you have a chance to live?"

Liu Chi remained silent, continuing to kowtow relentlessly.

Lü Yang, however, looked at him with great interest.

He had to admit that this Liu Chi was somewhat clever, recognizing the situation almost instantly.

With Lü Yang's strength, escape was impossible.

His only option was to beg for mercy.

Yet his weak cultivation gave him little bargaining power to catch Lü Yang's attention.

After much consideration, the only things he could offer were his spiritual root talent and loyalty.

As for Lady Xiao, her opinion was irrelevant.

The choice Liu Chi had made was already the best he could possibly make.

"Not bad, you have potential."

Lü Yang smiled slightly.

The moment he finished speaking, Liu Chi's eyes filled with overwhelming joy.

But before that joy could fully bloom, his body turned into a puddle of blood.

A lightning-infused root shot out from the blood and landed in Lü Yang's hand.

Liu Chi's assessment had not been wrong.

The so-called "mutated Lightning Spiritual Root" was indeed useful to Lü Yang.

However, what was useful was only the root itself.

"You, come with me."

After giving Lady Xiao this instruction, Lü Yang transformed into a streak of light and flew into the Shenxiao Sect.

Lady Xiao did not dare to be slow and followed closely behind.

Fortunately, Lü Yang was currently using the body of Su Nu, appearing as an extraordinarily beautiful woman.

Otherwise, Lady Xiao would have surely grown suspicious, thinking that Lü Yang was interested in her body.

Of course, Lü Yang indeed had his eyes on Lady Xiao's body—or more precisely, on the top-grade Water Spiritual Root within her.

It was perfect for in-depth study.

After all, the so-called "Spiritual Root" was a unique product of the Biyang Cultivation World.

If one wished to uncover the truth of this world, one had to start with the Spiritual Roots.

One day later.

As the frightened cultivators gradually left, news about Lü Yang quickly spread, causing great panic among the sects on the surrounding islands.

"He casually captured Ancestor Qing Ting and left him completely unable to resist?"

"He must be a Spirit Refining cultivator!"

"But aren't all Spirit Refining cultivators supposed to be within the Immortal Alliance? Why is one here with us?"

"Could it be a secret mission of the Immortal Alliance, and Qing Ting violated some taboo?"

All kinds of rumors spread like wildfire.

However, Lü Yang, who was now in the Shenxiao Sect, paid no attention to these rumors.

Instead, he directly ordered Lady Xiao to bring him all the scriptures and manuals in the Shenxiao Sect.

Most of them turned out to be worthless.

Only one Dao Manual piqued Lü Yang's interest.

It was the Shenxiao Sect's sect-guarding cultivation method, titled 『Ren Gui Fusion Shenxiao True Method』 .

"So that's how it is..."

Lü Yang frowned as he finished reading the entire manual.

Along the way, he summoned Lady Xiao into his secluded chamber and directly performed a soul-search, thoroughly extracting information.

After all, she was an ancestor of a sect, and through her, Lü Yang finally gained a complete understanding of the Biyang Cultivation World.

"In this Cultivation World, only those who possess a Spiritual Root can cultivate immortality!"

"However, Spiritual Roots are not innate from birth."

"Instead, they descend from the heavens and merge into a baby's body after birth, based on the baby's destiny and fortune."

"Because of this, there have long been conspiracy theories suggesting that Spiritual Roots are a means for the Immortal Alliance to control the number of cultivators."

"As for these true yet baseless rumors, the Immortal Alliance officially denies them while simultaneously cracking down on those who spread them."

Only with a Spiritual Root could one embark on the path of cultivation.

As for the cultivation path itself, it involved the continuous absorption and refinement of the world's spiritual energy through the Spiritual Root, purifying one's True Qi.

This path was roughly divided into seven realms.

"Ancestor Qing Ting claimed to be at the Nascent Soul Realm."

"But in reality, this term 'Nascent Soul' is merely an informal title and is not officially recognized by the Immortal Alliance."

"According to the Immortal Alliance's official classification, the seven realms are Qi Refining, Foundation Establishment, Core Formation, Nascent Soul, Spirit Refining, Void Return, and Dao Integration."

This made much more sense.

Previously, Lü Yang had thought that Qi Refining, Foundation Establishment, and Core Formation were overseas terms.

But now it seemed these were names deliberately altered to avoid invoking fear from higher beings.

After all, a true Golden Core Lord could perceive all of heaven and earth.

If one day such a being noticed that cultivators in Biyang Cultivation World dared to call themselves Golden Core, what if he got upset and slaughtered the entire realm?

What level did they think they were, daring to bear the same title?

The more Lü Yang delved into the system of Biyang Cultivation World, the more he felt something was amiss.

"The cultivation methods here never seem to elevate one's status or essence."

Above Nascent Soul was Spirit Refining.

Originally, Lü Yang had assumed that Spirit Refining was comparable to Foundation Establishment, which made him somewhat wary.

However, the Shenxiao Sect had previously produced a Spirit Refining expert.

『Ren Gui Fusion Shenxiao True Method』 also described Spirit Refining and even Void Return cultivators.

After reviewing these descriptions, Lü Yang realized that whether it was Spirit Refining or Void Return, both were essentially about further purifying True Qi, rather than elevating one's essence.

In other words, there was no qualitative change.

In the Biyang Cultivation World, even the strongest Dao Integration cultivator was still equivalent to a Qi Refining cultivator at the peak of their realm!

With such a low essence, Lü Yang could wipe them all out with a single breath!

Share to your friends

Tip: You can use left, right keyboard keys to browse between chapters.

Chapter 169: The Secret of the Spiritual Root, the Opportunity of Heavenly Gang

[1,613 words]

"Incredible."

Looking at the Dao Book in his hand, Lü Yang's expression grew even more astonished, as it sounded like this so-called Biyang Cultivation World was utterly powerless before a Foundation Establishment True Person.

However, that was merely on the surface.

By the simplest reasoning, how could a power that could not resist Foundation Establishment manage to occupy so many island territories in such a lawless place overseas?

So either there was truly a Foundation Establishment True Person backing the Biyang Cultivation World from behind the scenes, or the so-called strongest cultivators there, the Integration Grand Cultivators, had other means comparable to Foundation Establishment.

Otherwise, such a talent-rich treasure trove would have long been devoured clean.

Yet, these were secondary concerns.

Having experienced the Secret Realm of Technique Refinement, Lü Yang constantly reminded himself never to underestimate anyone, let alone an entire mature system.

Thus, he quickly noticed something more important:

“Patriarch Qingting... A cultivator at the Nascent Soul Realm, the Nascent Soul he condensed, in terms of True Qi, could actually be considered of superior quality.”

Strictly speaking, it could even rank as Fifth Grade.

If the Nascent Soul was already like this.

What if the realm was higher? There were still three realms above Nascent Soul!

“Continuously purifying True Qi, if Nascent Soul is Fifth Grade, could Spirit Refining reach Fourth Grade? Could Void Return be Third Grade, and could Integration achieve Second Grade True Qi?”

This was the key.

The grade of True Qi basically determined a cultivator's future; below Seventh Grade, one had no hope of Foundation Establishment, below Third Grade, no hope of forming a Golden Core, and without First Grade, one could not achieve a Nascent Soul!

Second Grade True Qi was still barely acceptable.

But what if Integration was not the limit of the Biyang Cultivation World?

If there were realms beyond Integration, could True Qi ascend even further?

“First Grade True Qi!?”

For a moment, Lü Yang was shocked by his own thoughts. First Grade True Qi! This concerned the Nascent Soul. Could such an opportunity really exist in a tiny offshore world?

One must know that even his 『Nine Transforming Dragon Art』, created by a Golden Core True Lord and perfected to fruition, could only produce Third Grade True Qi.

As for techniques capable of producing Second Grade True Qi, Lü Yang had lived eight lifetimes and had never even caught a glimpse of one, as if such a thing simply did not exist.

Let alone First Grade True Qi!

However, in the next second, Lü Yang's expression suddenly filled with doubt: "That's not right. Isn't the maximum lifespan of a perfected Qi Refining cultivator just one hundred and fifty years?"

Qi Refining Realm, Heaven's lifespan of one hundred and fifty years!

And that was only theoretical. In reality, the vast majority of Qi Refining cultivators could not even live to one hundred and fifty years, often dying at one hundred and twenty or thirty.

But what about the Biyang Cultivation World?

Logically speaking, these people, from the lowest Qi Refining to the highest Integration, all fell within the category of perfected Qi Refining.

Where, then, did their extended lifespans come from?

"Purifying True Qi can extend lifespan? Impossible."

"Moreover, this Biyang Cultivation World's system strictly speaking only refines Spiritual Roots, not the self. In theory, it should not extend lifespan at all..."

Yet in reality, the cultivators of the Biyang Cultivation World lived very long lives, even to a degree that made Lü Yang, a Foundation Establishment True Person, envious.

However, the structure of their lifespan was very strange.

"Mortal lifespan tops at thirty or forty years, so they often marry in their teens, become grandfathers by thirty, and by forty they are even considered auspicious."

"Qi Refining cultivators don't fare much better, living only forty or fifty years."

“Foundation Establishment is slightly better, living up to eighty years. Golden Core can reach one hundred and twenty years. Nascent Soul two hundred years. Spirit Refining three hundred years. Void Return five hundred years. Integration one thousand years.”

Incredible!

At this point, Lü Yang almost jumped up in shock. A Qi Refining cultivator could actually rival a Golden Core True Lord in lifespan, and without even needing to reincarnate!

But in the next moment, Lü Yang reacted: “That’s not right. It’s not that they don’t need to reincarnate, but that they cannot reincarnate. Without true Foundation Establishment, their souls have not undergone qualitative change. When they die, they truly die. As for how they live so long, it should be because they do not suffer the erosion of Bifeng.”

Yet, this still did not fully explain it.

Not undergoing Bifeng erosion only raised the upper limit of lifespan. But what about the lower limit? How did Qi Refining cultivators extend their lifespan to over a thousand years?

Moreover, the lifespans of mortals and low-level cultivators were far too short.

The higher the realm, the greater the lifespan gained upon breakthrough. The leap from Void Return to Integration even doubled lifespan, an utterly staggering difference.

“If I consider it from the perspective of the Primordial Saint Sect...”

Lü Yang’s brow gradually relaxed as he suddenly took out a root filament crackling with lightning. It was Liu Chi’s mutated Lightning Spiritual Root, the foundation of cultivation.

Next, Lü Yang summoned Madam Xiao to assist in the research.

Three days later.

“...So it is!”

“What a Spiritual Root! What a genius design!” Lü Yang pushed the exhausted Madam Xiao aside while staring intently at the Spiritual Root in his hand.

The Spiritual Root was the key to the cultivators’ lifespan in the Biyang Cultivation World!

“Called a Spiritual Root, but in reality, it is an absorber that extracts the lifespan of mortals and even low-level cultivators to replenish the lifespan lost by itself!”

Thus, the lifespans of mortals and low-level cultivators were so short.

As for the thousand-year lifespan of Integration Grand Cultivators, that was likely the limit of this world. Without reincarnation, living over a thousand years was the extreme, no more.

“In other words, this entire Biyang Cultivation World is a massive pyramid, with the vast number of mortals sacrificing their lifespan to nourish cultivators. Then the low-level cultivators nourish the high-level ones, and finally, everyone together nourishes the Integration Grand Cultivators at the top...”

Extracting marrow from bones, the hallmark of the Saint Sect!

“However, based on the characteristics of this cultivation system, this place should be related to the Innate True Person. The Innate True Person is no disciple of the Saint Sect.”

Lü Yang flipped through the records and finally paused on one page.

“The Battle against the Outer Heavenly Demons?”

The records vividly described the founding history of the Immortal Alliance, with Outer Heavenly Demons appearing out of nowhere, and the local cultivators banding together to finally repel the demons.

As he read, Lü Yang furrowed his brows.

“After the battle against the Outer Heavenly Demons, the surviving local cultivators founded the current Immortal Alliance, whose behavior gradually shifted into today’s bone-extracting model.”

“Something doesn’t add up.”

“Did the local cultivators really win?”

A group of perfected Qi Refining cultivators—if a single Foundation Establishment True Person appeared, they could be wiped out. How could such pathetic Outer Heavenly Demons be driven away by local cultivators?

“After winning, they founded the Immortal Alliance... Could it be that the Outer Heavenly Demons actually won, but merely borrowed the shell and reputation of the local cultivators to facilitate the complete transformation of the Biyang Cultivation World? And judging by the current Immortal Alliance system, this transformation has already succeeded.”

People like Chen Xinghai, mere mortals, spent their entire lives working for the Immortal Alliance.

People like Madam Xiao and Patriarch Qingting, though enjoying some freedom, were ultimately nothing more than higher-level workers of the Immortal Alliance.

A fully formed pyramid structure.

Under the rule of the Immortal Alliance, iron laws stood as mountains.

In an instant, Lü Yang's mind was struck with enlightenment, and the Celestial Observation Instrument between his brows spun rapidly, birthing comprehension:

“Wu belongs to Yang Earth, its Qi is solid and heavy, occupying the center to achieve balance.”

“In spring and summer, its Qi moves and disperses; in autumn and winter, its Qi settles and contracts—it governs the fate of all things!”

“So this is my breakthrough opportunity... The Fate of All Things that I seek, the 【Zhuo Wei】 , the Heavenly Gang of Wu Earth is hidden within this Immortal Alliance!”

The Heavenly Gang and Earth Fiend arose from the cosmos. Sometimes, they were not physical objects, but certain metaphysical concepts.

Wu Earth governed the fate of all things, just like the Immortal Alliance did with the Biyang Cultivation World.

The Immortal Alliance was the great mountain weighing down on the Biyang Cultivation World.

And this great mountain was the Wu Earth he sought!

Thus, to extract this conceptual form of Heavenly Gang, he either had to overthrow the Immortal Alliance or replace it!

“No wonder it's said that the Heavenly Gang and Earth Fiend are so hard to find...”

If they were merely simple treasures, why would so many be stuck at a minor realm of Foundation Establishment, unable to progress an inch? Why would the Saint Sect lack stock?

“To seek the Heavenly Gang and Earth Fiend, one must first have karmic merit and destiny to have a chance encounter. Next, one must have Dao comprehension—without enough insight, even if the opportunity is before your eyes, you won't recognize it. Finally, one must have strength—without sufficient power, you will only be destroyed by the tribulations descending at Foundation Establishment.”

Just like this time.

Had he lacked Dao comprehension and failed to grasp the principle that “Wu Earth governs the fate of all things,” he would have been like a headless fly, seeking the Heavenly Gang in vain.

“The path of cultivation... truly is fraught with hardship!”

Just as Lü Yang sighed with emotion, a voice suddenly sounded from outside the Shenxiao Sect, accompanied by a divine sense descending from the heavens, locking onto him directly:

“May I ask if you are a high cultivator of the Saint Sect?”

“The Immortal Alliance, Piaomiao, requests an audience.”

Share to your friends

Tip: You can use left, right keyboard keys to browse between chapters.

Chapter 170: Why Is He More and More Like a Demon Lord Again

[1,413 words]

Outside the Divine Firmament Sect, above the vast sea of clouds, there stood a female cultivator dressed in a white dress, her appearance charming and delicate, holding a golden treasure mirror in her hand.

"If the Sky-Observing Treasure Mirror is accurate, that person should still be here."

The female cultivator was still pondering when the light on the treasure mirror flickered and finally revealed a figure.

Upon seeing this, the female cultivator immediately showed a look of joy and hurriedly transmitted her voice to invite a meeting.

However, before her words had fully landed, she saw the figure in the mirror suddenly raise his head as if he had sensed something, locking eyes with her through the mirror.

This sight made the female cultivator's heart skip a beat.

In the next second, the void cracked open, and Lü Yang, possessed by Su Nu, stepped out leisurely and appeared in front of the female cultivator.

"Piāomiǎo greets the esteemed cultivator of the Primordial Saint Sect!"

Without any hesitation, the female cultivator bowed slightly and respectfully said, "It has been hundreds of years since a senior from the Upper Sect last visited the Chaotic Sea, making this place shine with renewed splendor."

'Hundreds of years?'

Lü Yang was slightly moved in his heart upon hearing this, but his expression remained unchanged.

"Your reaction is not bad. I am the Peak Master of Mending Heaven Peak of the Primordial Saint Sect, sent here on inspection by command."

After speaking, he took out the Mending Heaven Decree.

Before he left, Lü Yang had acted swiftly, not giving Lady Ruo Xiang any chance to react, so he had conveniently taken the decree that should have been left behind.

At this moment, using it to prove his identity could not be more fitting.

"So you are the Peak Master of the Primordial Saint Sect!"

Fairy Piāomiǎo took one glance at Lü Yang's decree and bowed down without saying another word.

However, Lü Yang's eyes showed a trace of doubt upon seeing this reaction.

This response was not right.

The Peak Master of Mending Heaven Peak was an infamous old demon in the Saint Sect, well-known by all.

If this was truly a subordinate sect of the Saint Sect, how could they not know anything?

Even if they were unaware of the recent internal events of the Saint Sect, they should at least be able to tell that he was not the real Peak Master.

In such a situation, if nothing else, they should have at least asked a question.

Yet, Fairy Piāomiǎo did not question it at all and directly acknowledged his identity.

In an instant, a thought arose in Lü Yang's heart:

'Is she trying to deceive me?'

'Could it be that she is trying to harm me?'

"Strike first to gain the advantage!"

The next moment, Fairy Piāomiǎo looked up in shock, only to see the 【Hall of Yama】 descending from the sky, its doors wide open, directly trapping her inside!

In an instant, Fairy Piāomiǎo's expression changed dramatically.

'Where did I give myself away?'

In fact, she had not exposed much, and Lü Yang only acted out of suspicion.

It was just that when he had doubts, Lü Yang's way of handling things was straightforward.

If he could fight, then he would fight first and ask questions later!

"Boom!"

In an instant, rolling waves of sinister energy howled, the Myriad Spirits Banner swayed, and countless ghost soldiers and generals appeared, charging at Fairy Piāomiǎo in formation.

However, upon seeing this, Fairy Piāomiǎo did not show any sign of panic.

Instead, she quickly calmed down, and a long silk ribbon appeared in her hand.

As she unfurled it, auspicious clouds rolled in, radiant colors surged, enveloping her completely and blocking the overwhelming sinister energy.

"Fellow Daoist, this is a misunderstanding."

While defending herself, Fairy Piāomiǎo did not forget to continue speaking:

"We bear no malice, we only wished to meet with a senior of the Primordial Saint Sect. We beg Fellow Daoist to show mercy."

Her tone was filled with weakness and pleading.

Lü Yang looked over and saw her looking tender and affectionate, her beautiful eyes shimmering with light, a look of grievance she dared not voice, evoking involuntary pity.

Unfortunately, Lü Yang was not interested in women.

In the next second, Lü Yang's true body, thousands of miles away, suddenly formed a hand seal, divine light flashing as 【Determining Intimacy and Distance】 was swiftly activated.

Swoosh——!

In an instant, white light flashed, and Su Nu's figure suddenly disappeared from the original spot.

Naturally, the 【Hall of Yama】 she had constructed followed closely behind.

At this moment, Fairy Piāomiǎo was still trapped inside the 【Hall of Yama】 and could not escape, thus being dragged away along with Su Nu, vanishing on the spot!

"Go!"

Lü Yang moved swiftly.

As soon as he remotely retrieved Su Nu, he waved his hand, sending dozens to hundreds of sealing talismans onto the 【Hall of Yama】.

"Spare me..."

Fairy Piāomiǎo's voice had just begun to sound when Lü Yang cut it off at the root.

Then, in a flash, Lü Yang disappeared from the Cultivation World.

At the center of the one hundred and eight islands of the Chaotic Sea.

Inside the main hall of the Immortal Alliance Headquarters.

"Piāomiǎo's aura has vanished?"

"The Sky-Observing Treasure Mirror can't find her?"

"It was working just now, but not anymore. The other party's escape speed was extremely fast. They disappeared in an instant and are probably already out of the Chaotic Sea's territory."

"This..."

Eleven obscure auras stood silently in the hall, exchanging glances, all seeing traces of fear in each other's eyes.

"Piāomiǎo is at least in the Integration Realm and has received the 【Imperial Mansion Golden Seal Doushuai True Edict】 .

According to ancient records, she should not be weaker than an ordinary Foundation Establishment True Person.

How could she be captured in a single encounter without even having the strength to resist?

Could it be that the one who came is stronger than just the early Foundation Establishment stage?"

The crowd began to discuss in hushed tones, their voices tinged with fear.

"What should we do now?"

"Three thousand years... It has already been three thousand years.

The destined day is approaching.

If we don't find a way to save ourselves, we will all die in this wretched place!"

"And if we ruin that Lord's plans, we might..."

"Enough!"

Finally, a senior Integration Realm cultivator could not help but curse under his breath.

"My mind is made up. We will use the 【Imperial Mansion Golden Seal Doushuai True Edict】 to locate Piāomiǎo's position."

"Do we really have to do this?"

"Shouldn't we try the Sky-Observing Treasure Mirror one more time?"

One of the Integration Realm cultivators hesitated.

"Every time we use it, we weaken further.

It will accelerate the process of us being completely refined by that thing..."

"That's still better than waiting for death!"

The Integration Realm cultivator who spoke was filled with the aura of decay, nearly a thousand years old, and held the highest prestige.

After several rounds of discussion, the Integration Realm cultivators finally decided to cooperate.

Outside the Chaotic Sea.

Although Lü Yang had left, he had not gone far.

Instead, he searched along the boundary until he found an underwater cave, where he established a cave dwelling.

Only then did he take out the Myriad Spirits Banner.

"Let me interrogate her properly..."

He unlocked the 【Hall of Yama】 and seized the now weak and powerless Fairy Piāomiǎo.

Although her true level was still in the Qi Refining stage, she had falsely claimed a Foundation Establishment position.

In terms of strength, she was about the same as Su Nu.

However, even if it was a false claim, as long as she guarded her Sea of Consciousness tightly, Lü Yang, with his current cultivation, could not perform a soul search.

The result would only be a waste of effort.

Fairy Piāomiǎo obviously knew this as well, which made her appear very calm.

"I won't say anything."

"No, you will."

Lü Yang responded with a calm expression as well.

Although soul searching would not work, after taking over as the acting Peak Master of Mending Heaven Peak, he had obtained the complete Mending Heaven True Scripture.

Since soul searching was not an option, he would use harvesting!

Through the Mending Heaven True Scripture, combined with his talent as a 【Dual Cultivation Prodigy】 , he could completely extract the information he wanted from Fairy Piāomiǎo!

At this thought, Lü Yang could not help but sigh again.

He had clearly come to the overseas region this time to improve his image and become a good person, but as things progressed, why did he seem to be becoming more and more like a demon lord again?

"Sigh, the Saint Sect has truly led me astray!"

However, there was no other choice.

Although Lü Yang considered his Dao heart as firm as iron, never swayed by women, for the sake of the Dao and his own cultivation, he had no choice but to brace himself and proceed.

Share to your friends

Tip: You can use left, right keyboard keys to browse between chapters.

[1,574 words]

One day passed.

Lü Yang pushed away the unconscious Fairy Piaomiao and let out a faint sigh.

To be honest, he had actually considered alternatives to dual cultivation.

For example, refining Fairy Piaomiao into a Banner Spirit using the Ten Thousand Spirits Banner.

However, this attempt had failed because Fairy Piaomiao's True Spirit was not inside her body.

The Ten Thousand Spirits Banner could not capture it, let alone refine her into a Banner Spirit.

So he had no choice but to strip down and go into battle himself.

After three hundred rounds of fierce combat with Fairy Piaomiao, leaving her dazed and begging for mercy, Lü Yang finally obtained the information he wanted.

" **【Imperial Palace Golden Seal Doushuai True Decree】** ."

This was the deepest secret hidden in Fairy Piaomiao's heart.

It was also the cornerstone of the Immortal Alliance and the entire Biyang Cultivation World.

The reason was simple:

The so-called spiritual roots were split from this treasure!

However, this mysterious treasure did not originate here but was brought in by an outsider.

The reason traced back to the founding of the Immortal Alliance thousands of years ago.

"My earlier guess was indeed correct."

At the beginning of the Immortal Alliance, local cultivators of the Biyang Cultivation World fought against an Outer Region Heavenly Demon, suffering countless casualties.

The current Immortal Alliance had rewritten history, making many believe the Outer Region Heavenly Demon was a massive race and that it was a great war.

But this was not the case.

The so-called Outer Region Heavenly Demon was actually just one person from beginning to end.

The clash between the local cultivators and the Outer Region Heavenly Demon was not a war, but a massacre.

That person had almost slaughtered the entire Biyang Cultivation World.

It was only when some cowardly cultivators chose to surrender that the Outer Region Heavenly Demon spared them.

Then, under his command, they established the Immortal Alliance.

Afterward, the Outer Region Heavenly Demon completely reorganized the order of the Biyang Cultivation World.

He left behind the 【Imperial Palace Golden Seal Doushuai True Decree】 before leaving gracefully.

It was only after that that spiritual roots appeared in the Biyang Cultivation World, transforming it into the current state where all beings were materials.

Without a doubt, this was the work of a True Person of the Primordial Saint Sect.

When Lü Yang learned who had left behind this treasure, he sincerely sighed.

"Almost forgot about you."

Daoist Hong Yun!

That's right.

According to Fairy Piaomiao's memories, the cultivator who had slaughtered the Biyang Cultivation World, reorganized its order, and left behind the treasure was Daoist Hong Yun!

In an instant, old and new grudges surged in Lü Yang's heart.

Lü Yang had not forgotten that in his fourth lifetime, it was this very person who had suddenly appeared and snatched away the fruits of his hard battle!

"This place was actually set up by him?"

Lü Yang pondered for a moment, then shook his head.

"No, the Biyang Cultivation World and its cultivation system already existed before he came."

"Rather than saying he arranged it, it's more accurate to say he was also a latecomer who seized the nest of another."

"This place must have originally been the work of an Innate True Person."

"Later, it was taken over by Daoist Hong Yun."

"He probably did this secretly without the Primordial Saint Sect's knowledge, so even True Person Chong Guang likely doesn't know about it."

After all, Daoist Hong Yun and True Person Chong Guang were mortal enemies.

"Under his design, the entire Biyang Cultivation World became a massive talent cultivation base."

"And all the talents cultivated would eventually be used for one thing."

【Imperial Palace Golden Seal Doushuai True Decree】 !

Daoist Hong Yun left behind this mysterious treasure.

This treasure split off spiritual roots, while also restricting cultivation and grasping the lifeline of everyone in the Biyang Cultivation World.

Even the great cultivators of the Integration Realm were no exception.

"Once one broke through to the Integration Realm, their True Spirit would immediately be absorbed by this treasure."

"A mark would be imprinted, turning them into mere tools for refining this treasure."

"The only benefit was having a long lifespan and being able to temporarily borrow the treasure's power, falsely presenting themselves as Foundation Establishment cultivators."

"But this was only to make the talents more useful."

In essence, they were still consumables.

Even the name "Biyang Cultivation World" was given by Daoist Hong Yun.

Because the 【Imperial Palace Golden Seal Doushuai True Decree】 he left behind was a True Treasure.

Above Spirit Treasures, there were True Treasures!

"Using billions of mortals and millions of cultivators as materials to refine a single True Treasure."

"Biyang Cultivation, Biyang Cultivation..."

"It's really about refining a True Treasure!"

What a grand scheme!

What ruthless methods!

"Judging by the timeline, Daoist Hong Yun had likely already reincarnated thousands of years ago."

"Arranging this place was probably his preparation for reclaiming his position."

At this thought, Lü Yang's expression suddenly changed.

"This is bad!"

If the True Spirits of the Integration Realm cultivators were all tied to the 【Imperial Palace Golden Seal Doushuai True Decree】 ...

Could the Immortal Alliance also use this to locate him?

In the Chaotic Current Sea, at the headquarters of the Immortal Alliance.

"We've found the location!"

In the grand hall, a talisman hovered quietly in mid-air.

Eleven Integration Realm cultivators simultaneously activated their True Qi, continuously pouring it into the talisman.

Its material was neither gold nor jade.

It appeared light but was actually quite heavy.

The tadpole-like script outlined the forms of cloud dragons and strange birds.

As it was activated, it immediately revealed a display of colorful petals and golden radiance.

Wind, clouds, water, and fire intermingled, creating numerous phenomena that seemed both near and infinitely far.

"Shall we pursue?"

One Integration Realm cultivator asked hesitantly.

"This person captured Piaomiao with ease. We might be in danger if we act rashly. Why not seek some external help?"

"Coincidentally, my friend has not yet left."

The speaker was a cultivator named Mu Huan, who was known for traveling overseas and making friends.

Recently, he had just met an extraordinary person.

"I recently invited him to the Immortal Alliance."

"According to him, he is a disciple of the Pure Land of Deep Joy in Jiangxi, inland."

"This Pure Land is remarkable. I have verified it carefully, and it is a force on the same level as the Primordial Saint Sect!"

"With his help, our chances will increase significantly."

"Is this person not afraid of the Primordial Saint Sect?"

"Of course not!" Mu Huan chuckled.

"According to him, he was recently fighting against the disciples of the Primordial Saint Sect as if it were nothing."

"So powerful?"

The other Integration Realm cultivators were pleasantly surprised upon hearing this.

After all, an extra ally meant higher chances of success.

Mu Huan then took out a communication talisman and began to cast a spell to contact the person.

However, he held back one detail.

He did not mention that Lü Yang was very likely a True Person of the Primordial Saint Sect.

After all, the reputation of the Primordial Saint Sect was overwhelming.

If the ally hesitated because of it, things would get complicated.

Not long after, a streak of light descended from the sky.

"Amitābha."

As the light dissipated, it revealed a young monk dressed in a dazzling kasaya, holding a nine-ringed staff.

He appeared dignified and compassionate.

Mu Huan immediately stepped forward to greet him.

"Master, I must trouble you once again."

The young monk shook his head with a smile.

"This humble monk came overseas precisely to deliver all beings from suffering."

"As the saying goes, saving a single life is better than building a seven-story pagoda."

"Now that Benefactor Piaomiao is in trouble, how could this humble monk stand by idly?"

Hearing this, everyone showed expressions of respect.

Mu Huan immediately cupped his hands and said:

"Then I shall activate the 【Imperial Palace Golden Seal Doushuai True Decree】 ."

"With this treasure guiding us, even ten thousand miles will be but a blink away."

Hearing this, the young monk lowered his eyelids to conceal the greed in his eyes.

"Rest assured, leave it to this humble monk."

The young monk waved his hand confidently, giving off an air of complete assurance.

This immediately settled the hearts of Mu Huan and the other Integration Realm cultivators.

In the next moment, the 【Imperial Palace Golden Seal Doushuai True Decree】 in the hall radiated brilliantly.

The young monk felt the scenery before him shift rapidly.

When he regained his senses, he found himself and the Integration cultivators standing above the sea.

Sweeping his divine sense, he immediately located a cave dwelling beneath the sea.

'Hahaha! Time for me to shine!'

The young monk had spent several decades overseas.

He had left the inland because he deemed it too dangerous.

He came overseas seeking easier prey, wanting to fish in a smaller pond.

Over the years, he had indeed lived comfortably.

Especially after his master died and the Bodhisattva personally appointed him as the Senior Brother.

This made him even more satisfied and convinced that the overseas life was far better than the inland.

He no longer had to worry about suddenly encountering that Lü fellow, the great demon of the Primordial Saint Sect.

At this thought, the young monk's confidence surged.

"Hey! Wicked creature! Release Benefactor Piaomiao at once!"

A Buddhist chant echoed like thunder.

The young monk, eager to show off, transformed his Buddhist light into a giant hand that split the sea, revealing the cave dwelling within.

"Behold my great... great... great..."

The next second, the young monk saw the familiar face of the black-robed Daoist standing at the cave entrance.

His body trembled instantly, as if his soul had flown out.

"This really is..."

Walking out of the cave, Lü Yang was equally surprised to see the young monk.

He immediately smiled.

"So it's Fellow Daoist Guang Ming? It seems we are truly fated to meet again."

Who's fated with you!

Guang Ming felt like crying but forced a smile through gritted teeth.

In his heart, he cursed loudly:

Amitābha's Tuo Buddha, what the hell!

How did I run into this great demon again!

Share to your friends

Tip: You can use left, right keyboard keys to browse between chapters.

Chapter 172: Great Accomplishment True Qi, Grade One Opportunity!?

[1,685 words]

"Everyone, don't move!"

At this moment, Guang Ming appeared to be smiling on the surface, but in reality, he had already secretly sent a voice transmission to the group of Combined Dao cultivators behind him, warning them not to make a move.

“Master Guang Ming?”

Mu Huan’s expression slightly changed when he saw this.

“With the eleven of us gathered here, and with Master’s assistance, why waste time with this person?”

“Why not strike directly?”

As soon as these words came out, Guang Ming’s face twitched uncontrollably.

What do you mean by with Master’s assistance?

You bunch of idiots want to go die, but don’t drag this poor monk into it!

Eleven Combined Dao cultivators—do you think pretending to be Foundation Establishment is impressive?

If a real fight breaks out, even another eleven wouldn’t be this ruthless person’s match!

For a moment, Guang Ming recalled past experiences.

He thought of Lü Yang’s unmatched dominance on the Seizing Dao battlefield, full of vigor and spirit.

He thought of his own master, Arhat Fulong, dying unwillingly after being tricked by Lü Yang.

Thinking of this, he quickly continued to send voice transmissions to the group:

“It’s useless.”

“His innate divine ability can shift through ten thousand directions, killing one of you and then escaping to kill a second.”

“In a prolonged battle, you are bound to lose without a doubt!”

“Innate divine ability? What is that?”

Guang Ming felt that he had already explained painstakingly, yet the question from this Combined Dao cultivator made his face turn purple, almost suffocating from frustration.

Ignorant overseas savages!

But on second thought, it wasn't surprising.

Combined Dao cultivators relied on the 【Imperial Palace Golden Talisman Dou Shuai True Edict】 to fake Foundation Establishment.

How could they possibly comprehend an innate divine ability?

Since they had never comprehended it, it was only natural they didn't know.

So Guang Ming gritted his teeth, just about to explain, when a Combined Dao cultivator next to him suddenly took out a magical sword and, without saying a word, slashed toward Lü Yang!

In an instant, all eleven Combined Dao cultivators attacked at once!

While attacking, Mu Huan did not forget to shout:

“Master Guang Ming, why bother with this villain any longer?”

“Quickly make your move, don't let him escape!”

Guang Ming: “...”

Beasts!

Trying to drag him into this mess!?

However, Guang Ming was a veteran of countless battles and how could he be coerced by the Immortal Alliance?

His expression immediately turned stern as he suddenly took action, using an escape technique to flee a thousand miles away.

“Spare me, my lord! Spare me!”

He had finally climbed to the position of the 【Fulong Temple】's master after his master's sudden death, enjoying a three-hundred-year heavenly lifespan.

How could he die meaninglessly in these overseas lands?

“I'm not with them!”

Such cowardly behavior made Mu Huan and the other Combined Dao cultivators secretly shocked, their eyes filled with suspicion as they looked at Lü Yang, who stood with his hands behind his back.

Was this person truly so ruthless?

Though they thought so, with the arrow already nocked, they had no choice but to release it.

The Combined Dao cultivators dared not hold back.

Instead, they pushed their magical power to the limit, fully activating their magical treasures.

In an instant, spiritual lights surged like a tide.

Eleven magical treasures struck out simultaneously, leaving Lü Yang with no escape route, instantly engulfing his figure.

They had originally thought this joint strike would be enough to throw him into chaos.

But unexpectedly, Lü Yang simply made a hand seal.

A divine brilliance manifested behind him.

With a single shake, all the magical treasures disappeared without a trace.

【Affinity Determination】 !

Such a sight immediately left Mu Huan and the other Combined Dao cultivators stunned in place.

Upon careful sensing, they discovered that their magical treasures had fallen thousands of miles away.

What kind of technique was this!?

Before they could react, Lü Yang took out the All-Spirits Banner.

The banner unfurled, and smoke billowed skyward.

The figures of Su Nu and Chen Xin'an appeared simultaneously.

“Master, where are you running to?”

Su Nu smiled charmingly.

The Yama Hall blotted out the sky and covered the sun, cast by Lü Yang's spell right beside Guang Ming, blocking his attempt to escape.

"N-no, I was just admiring the scenery here."

Guang Ming forced a smile.

Knowing he could no longer escape, he could only obediently stay put while racking his brain for a way out of this crisis.

However, at that moment—

"This... is the All-Spirits Banner!?"

Among the Combined Dao cultivators of the Immortal Alliance, the oldest and most senior cultivator suddenly cried out in shock upon seeing the All-Spirits Banner in Lü Yang's hand.

Lü Yang was not surprised by this reaction.

In fact, he had deliberately taken out the All-Spirits Banner to see if anyone would recognize it.

After all, according to his speculation, this Biyang Cultivation World was likely the work of the Innate True Person.

Though it had been taken over by Daoist Hong Yun, the inheritance might not have been completely severed.

"Stop! Everyone, stop!"

Soon, that senior cultivator stopped everyone, then looked at Lü Yang with a nervous expression.

"Did you obtain the Innate True Person's inheritance?"

As soon as these words were spoken, everyone was in an uproar.

Mu Huan and the other Combined Dao cultivators showed expressions of disbelief and excitement.

"The Innate True Person's inheritance? Elder Lin, are you sure you're not mistaken?"

"How could I be mistaken?"

The elder, known as Elder Lin, shook his head.

“Turning people into slaves, gathering forms and dispersing qi—that is precisely the All-Spirits Banner.”

“So the Innate True Person’s inheritance truly has not been lost!”

Elder Lin then looked at Lü Yang and said in a deep voice:

“To be honest, the reason we had to make things difficult for you was because our true spirits are bound by a mysterious treasure.”

“After death, our souls cannot be freed.”

“That treasure comes from the Sacred Sect.”

“To unravel it, only a True Person of the Sacred Sect holds any hope.”

“However, since you carry the Innate True Person’s inheritance, that is a different matter.”

“If you are willing to help us lift the restrictions on our souls, there would be no need for us to continue fighting to the death.”

“...Is that so.”

Lü Yang responded indifferently.

“I did indeed receive the predecessor’s inheritance, but why should I help you?”

“What benefit would I gain from it?”

“This is a secret of our Immortal Alliance...”

Elder Lin’s voice paused when he heard this.

Lü Yang immediately waved his hand.

The Qutian Mirror activated, and a beam of Bing Fire light isolated everyone from the outside world.

With this, the cause and effect here became difficult to trace.

Lü Yang then looked at Elder Lin.

“Speak.”

Elder Lin cupped his hands.

“Since you captured Piaomiao, with your means, I assume you already know the origin of our Immortal Alliance.”

“However, Piaomiao’s cultivation is still shallow, and her knowledge is limited to the Biyang Cultivation World.”

“There are things she does not know.”

“Only old fellows like me, who have lived for over eight hundred years, know more.”

Saying this, Elder Lin took out a jade disk and handed it directly to Lü Yang.

“This item was left by the Innate True Person.”

“Back when Daoist Hong Yun came, he tried to destroy or take it away, but all efforts were in vain.”

“Because great karmic forces bound it to this place.”

“The reason behind it—just take a look and you will understand.”

Lü Yang smiled when he heard this.

However, he did not accept the jade disk.

Instead, he glanced at Chen Xin’an beside him.

“Go, take it and see what secrets lie within.”

How could he personally examine such an item of unknown origin?

What if the soul of the Innate True Person was hiding inside, waiting for someone to probe with divine sense, and then seizing the chance to possess them?

Better to let Chen Xin’an take the risk.

At Lü Yang’s command, Chen Xin’an immediately stepped forward and scanned the jade disk with his divine sense.

Meanwhile, Lü Yang, through the connection with his guardian spirit, watched the contents of the jade disk while holding his divine ability at the ready, prepared to use **【 Different Self】** to sever ties with Chen Xin’an at any moment.

Very quickly, he saw the information within the jade disk:

【Seek gold and die, die without regret; transform the body into Dao sin, leaving blessings for later generations; hold my banner, enter my gold-seeking land, refine it, and one can achieve Grade One Great Accomplishment True Qi!】

“Great Accomplishment True Qi... Grade One!?”

In an instant, Lü Yang’s pupils contracted.

His earlier speculation had turned out to be true.

This Biyang Cultivation World really could refine True Qi to Grade One!

Seeing Lü Yang’s reaction, Elder Lin also smiled faintly.

“The Innate True Person’s gold-seeking land—only I know its location.”

“Well, are you willing to help now?”

Although they were in the Biyang Cultivation World, Elder Lin was not entirely ignorant of the inland territories.

He knew very well how tempting Grade One True Qi would be for Lü Yang.

At this moment, Lü Yang was indeed tempted.

Although his Foundation Establishment was flawless and could not be redone with Grade One True Qi, having it as a support could still bring further changes to his Dao foundation.

It might even add a layer of profundity to his innate divine ability.

For any Foundation Establishment True Person, this was an immense temptation.

For a moment, Lü Yang appeared hesitant.

“Let me think about it...”

Elder Lin remained patient.

After all, he could afford to wait a little longer and believed that after weighing the pros and cons, Lü Yang would make the right choice.

One incense stick’s time passed.

Then two.

Wasn't this taking a bit too long?

"...No, something's wrong!!!"

The next second, Elder Lin's expression drastically changed.

He immediately pushed his magical power to the limit, breaking through the treasure light Lü Yang had used earlier to isolate cause and effect.

Immediately after, a grand formation filled with radiant brilliance appeared before everyone's eyes.

Due to the treasure light's concealment, no one had noticed the formation being set up.

By the time they realized, they had already fallen into its trap!

"You!?"

Elder Lin turned back in fury.

But where was Lü Yang's figure?

Lü Yang, who had just been pretending to be lost in thought, had somehow already moved outside the formation.

He looked at the people trapped inside as if they were fish in a barrel.

At the same time, Guang Ming, who had stayed far enough away to avoid getting caught in the formation, sighed when he saw this.

These overseas cultivators...

How could they trust the words of a Sacred Sect True Person?

Clearly, they had not suffered enough yet!

Share to your friends

Tip: You can use left, right keyboard keys to browse between chapters.

Chapter 173: Is It Fate That I Must Go?

[1,585 words]

“Beast... beast!”

Inside the grand formation, Old Lin was so furious that his hands trembled.

He had never imagined that an eight-hundred-year-old senior cultivator in the Combined Dao Realm like himself could actually be fooled by a youngster!

Yet, despite his rage, he was filled with confusion.

That was Grade One True Qi!

As far as he knew, it was enough to drive any Foundation Establishment True Person mad with desire.

Why was Lü Yang not tempted?

Did he really not want it?

Of course, that was not the truth.

It was undeniable that Lü Yang was truly tempted by the so-called Grade One True Qi of the Grand Completion Stage.

After all, it concerned the future path of his Dao and whether he could advance further.

Not to mention, this was left behind by an Innate True Person.

He already had the Innate True Person’s Myriad Spirits Banner and the Innate Dao Book in his possession.

Undoubtedly, he had karmic ties with it and was highly likely to obtain the opportunity hidden within.

‘But even if it is fate, even if I am tempted, does that mean I have to go?’

Lü Yang’s mind was incomparably clear, the lesson from Arhat Fulong still vivid in his memory!

‘One must be focused in doing things, not abandon the root for the branch, and even less should one be overly greedy. I can always dedicate another lifetime to scheme for that Grade One True Qi later.’

‘As for now?’

'Better to first trap and kill these Combined Dao Great Cultivators of the Immortal Alliance, overthrow their rule, extract the Qi of Earth Phase, and break through to the mid-Foundation Establishment Realm!'

Therefore, from the very beginning, Lü Yang had no interest in Old Lin's words, nor in the secrets behind the Innate True Person.

Everything he showed was merely a tactic to stall them, setting up the grand formation to trap everyone inside, and finally wipe them all out in one move!

"Formation, rise!"

Lü Yang formed a seal with his hand to activate the formation.

In an instant, countless beams of formation light surged up, gathering the limitless sea's spiritual energy from ten thousand miles around into a vast ocean!

Beneath everyone's feet, the sea turned to stone!

The scenery of the seabed, once hidden beneath the waves, emerged one by one under the daylight, while monstrous waves rose all around, reaching the heavens.

Looking up to the sky, there was no longer any daylight or blue sky to be seen.

All that filled their vision was a vast river and sea suspended in the heavens, reflecting the sky's light, drawing nearer and nearer, crashing down upon them!

In an instant, the entire sea seemed to wail.

Due to the intense evaporation of water vapor, dazzling rainbow lights even rose into the sky.

"Heavens..." a Combined Dao Great Cultivator could not help but groan softly.

This was no longer something human effort could achieve.

This was the might of heaven and earth!

Lü Yang, borrowing the power of the grand formation, stirred the vast ocean, causing billions of tons of seawater to overturn and crash down.

In front of this force, so-called Combined Dao Cultivators were no different from ants!

The next moment, the seawater fell.

Everyone hastily activated their protective lights, not to resist directly, but to push their mana to the limit and connect with the 【Imperial Palace Golden Seal Dou Shuai True Edict】 in the Immortal Alliance.

Human strength could not withstand such natural might.

To resist it, they could only elevate their status!

For a moment, radiant lights appeared on the bodies of all the Combined Dao Cultivators, empowering their Foundation Establishment status.

Clearly, they intended to use this status to withstand Lü Yang's ocean bombardment.

However, Lü Yang, seeing this, revealed a slight smile.

Previously, after sitting in meditation for decades in the Primordial Saint Sect and outlasting Arhat Fulong, he had also studied formations and talismans, making rapid progress with the help of the Sky-Observing Instrument.

By now, he was already a Grade Six Formation Master!

And the formation before him was one he had meticulously derived—a Grade Six Formation, equivalent to the "Foundation Establishment" level in the field of formations.

How could it possibly fail to counter their status?

With this in mind, Lü Yang immediately took out the 【Abi Sword】 .

“Go!”

Forming a seal, the 【Abi Sword】 fell into the center of the formation.

Under the sword's influence, the previously clear blue seawater instantly turned into a towering sea of blood!

【Heaven-Filling Blood Sea Sword Formation Diagram】 !

This formation was an advanced evolution of the 【Blood-Washing Heavenly River Sword Formation Diagram】 Lü Yang had created during his Qi Refining days!

Now empowered by the 【Abi Sword】 , the blue ocean transformed entirely into a sea of blood, which also possessed Foundation Establishment level status.

With one heavy strike, it immediately crushed a Combined Dao Great Cultivator at the front, breaking his bones and tendons, his aura rapidly withering amid crackling sounds.

Next was the second, then the third...

In the end, only the oldest, most powerful, and deeply rooted Old Lin remained, still barely holding on, yet clearly at his limit.

Boom! Boom! Boom!

The blood sea surged again and again.

Old Lin struggled desperately, yet his face showed a trace of unspeakable helplessness and frustration.

Strictly speaking, Lü Yang's True Qi was actually inferior in quality to his.

The "True Dragon Fiend" refined through the Nine Transforming Dragon Art was only Grade Three, while he, as a Combined Dao Great Cultivator, had True Qi that could rank as Grade Two in the inland regions.

Unfortunately, Lü Yang did not compete on quality!

With the formation's empowerment and the vast ocean carrying the spiritual energy of heaven and earth, even if his quality was inferior, the overwhelming quantity was enough to completely crush him!

"Pfft!"

In the end, Old Lin could only let out a miserable howl, frozen like amber in the boundless sea of blood just like the other Combined Dao Great Cultivators.

Outside the 【Heaven-Filling Blood Sea Sword Formation Diagram】 , Lü Yang stood with his hands behind his back, looking up to the sky.

"Still no sign of him."

To be honest, he had thought that after suppressing so many Combined Dao Great Cultivators of the Immortal Alliance, Daoist Hong Yun would surely appear upon sensing it.

This 【Heaven-Filling Blood Sea Sword Formation Diagram】 had been prepared for him.

Yet, there was no reaction at all.

"I see... True Person Chong Guang must be watching Daoist Hong Yun at all times. If he appeared rashly and got discovered by True Person Chong Guang, that would truly be disastrous."

At this thought, Lü Yang felt completely at ease.

Since Daoist Hong Yun could not come, there was nothing to fear!

In the next second, he took down a small gourd hanging at his waist, uncorked it, and an invisible, odorless, ethereal smoke drifted out.

【Three-Nine Soul-Dissolving Gourd】 !

This treasure, paired with the Abi Sword, contained a wisp of 【Soul-Dissolving, Spirit-Scattering, God-Seizing Smoke】 , which could still bewilder the soul of a Foundation Establishment True Person.

Lü Yang willed the smoke to enter the formation.

He did not immediately kill the Combined Dao Great Cultivators.

Instead, he first used the blood sea to suppress their physical bodies, then used the 【Soul-Dissolving, Spirit-Scattering, God-Seizing Smoke】 to suppress their souls.

“After all, I’m not born a bloodthirsty killer.”

Moreover, the true spirits of these people were not in their bodies but were entrusted to the 【Imperial Palace Golden Seal Dou Shuai True Edict】 .

Killing them outright might actually let them escape.

“Almost forgot, there’s still one more.”

Lü Yang shifted his gaze and saw Guang Ming, who had just been far away, now rolling and crawling toward him, sliding on his knees in midair without a second word:

“Your Excellency’s divine might is unfathomable, this humble monk is in awe!”

“I am very familiar with the Immortal Alliance headquarters. If Your Excellency wishes to go, this humble monk is willing to lead the way! To be honest, I too dislike these overseas natives.”

Before Guang Ming could finish, Lü Yang waved his hand to interrupt him.

To be honest, Lü Yang had not thought much of Guang Ming when they first met.

The second time they met, he considered using him.

But by the third meeting, he had developed a bit of wariness.

Meeting once might be a coincidence, twice an accident.

But a third time? That was definitely intentional.

Especially in the vast overseas region, for the other party to encounter him again by chance, even a fool could tell there must be karmic entanglement.

Yet this person was still useful.

“. Very well, come with me.”

Lü Yang set aside his distractions, used his divine power to scoop up Guang Ming, and stored the formation along with the unconscious Combined Dao Cultivators into the 【 Three-Nine Soul-Dissolving Gourd】 .

Immediately after, he flew off in a streak of light, heading straight for the Immortal Alliance under Guang Ming’s guidance.

At this moment, the Immortal Alliance was already in chaos.

After all, the soul lamps of eleven Combined Dao Great Cultivators had all dimmed, almost extinguished.

For the mid-to-high-level cultivators of the Immortal Alliance, it was as if the sky had fallen.

Seeing this, Lü Yang did not hesitate and landed above the Immortal Alliance headquarters.

Using his divine power, he sealed the entire island, blocking the void and preventing anyone from entering or leaving.

The reason he had rushed over was to seize control of the situation as quickly as possible.

Otherwise, if anyone escaped, it would be difficult to manage later.

“Next comes extracting the Qi.”

To harvest the Earth Phase Qi, he had to first destroy the old order and establish a new one, removing the Immortal Alliance, the “great mountain” pressing down on the Biyang Cultivation World.

For other cultivators, this step might seem utterly baffling.

“Luckily, I hail from the Primordial Saint Sect.”

The Primordial Saint Sect had a complete and effective method for quickly destroying a force, neutralizing it, and ultimately taking full control.

Share to your friends

Tip: You can use left, right keyboard keys to browse between chapters.

[1,481 words]

Immortal Alliance Headquarters.

As a force that had dominated the Biyang Cultivation World for three thousand years, with its system and rule deeply ingrained in people's hearts, the scale of the Immortal Alliance's headquarters was nothing short of magnificent.

Jade towers and crystal palaces, pavilions and terraces.

Here, cultivators at the Nascent Soul, Spirit Refining, and even Void Returning stages—rarely seen in the outside world—could be seen everywhere, yet at this moment, they had all gathered together.

At this moment, these high and mighty great cultivators, who normally stood above all, wore expressions of fear as they stared fixedly at the grand hall where the Integration-stage cultivators usually secluded themselves.

More precisely, they were looking at the figure standing in the center of the hall, hands clasped behind his back, eyes filled with interest as he sized up the crowd.

Just then, Guang Ming took the initiative to step forward.

“Greetings, Alliance Leader!”

His loud voice echoed in all directions.

Although no one knew Guang Ming, with someone taking the lead, others quickly followed suit, and the scattered greetings swiftly grew louder:

“Greetings, Alliance Leader!”

Seeing this, Lü Yang immediately swept his divine sense over the crowd.

Who was sincere, and who was pretending, was now all laid bare before his eyes.

However, Lü Yang did not care what the people of the Immortal Alliance thought of him.

In fact, the Primordial Saint Sect had never concerned itself with the opinions of its subordinate sects.

After all, the reputation of the Saint Sect was well known to all.

To make others willingly submit was not just hopeless—it was simply impossible.

Moreover, after ruling for so long, the Immortal Alliance naturally had its own die-hard loyalists.

Thus, before summoning everyone, Lü Yang had already carried out a thorough purge.

After all, if they made things difficult for him, they could not blame him for making things easy for them—by ending them.

Those who now stood before him had already given up resistance.

This was the first step of the Saint Sect's method of controlling subordinate forces—use absolute strength to establish one's position and eliminate all thoughts of resistance.

The second step was to state his stance.

“This time, with the Immortal Alliance facing great upheaval, the great cultivators have entrusted this seat to temporarily manage the Alliance, but I lack practical experience, so I must rely on your full cooperation.”

With this single sentence, he set the tone.

Rest assured, I will not touch your power or status, nor will I interfere randomly.

The benefits you hold today will still be yours tomorrow!

As these words fell, the expressions of several Void Returning cultivators immediately relaxed considerably.

Then came the third step.

In any organization, there were bound to be factions.

Where there were factions, there were conflicts of interest.

If there were no conflicts, then create some.

Then stir up contradictions.

What Lü Yang needed to do was to draw separate “big pies” for each faction based on their interests.

Then make these pies conflict with each other.

This way, in their scramble for benefits, they would fight among themselves.

Lü Yang could then step in as mediator and naturally become the true authority.

So after reassuring the crowd, Lü Yang met with several Void Returning cultivators one by one.

He had plenty of bargaining chips.

After all, the Alliance’s resources had previously been concentrated in the hands of the Integration-stage cultivators.

Now, all of it belonged to him.

Perfect for drawing pies.

As a result, within just three short months, the already disunited cultivators began to engage in infighting.

They competed to show their loyalty, eager to gain Lü Yang’s favor.

With this foundation laid, they could hardly refuse any request Lü Yang put forward.

Thus, in the third month of taking over the Immortal Alliance, Lü Yang opened up access to cultivation methods.

He had even prepared a slogan:

“Equality for All, Freedom to Cultivate!”

In the Biyang Cultivation World, cultivation methods required innate spiritual roots to practice.

However, the methods Lü Yang provided could be easily learned by anyone, spiritual roots or not.

From now on, cultivators with spiritual roots and those without would naturally form opposing factions.

Internal struggles would erupt, with both sides fighting for dominance.

Regardless of right or wrong, they would oppose anything proposed by their opponents.

Everything would be judged not by merit, but by factional stance.

And to overpower their rivals, they could only unite more firmly around Lü Yang.

This was the fourth step, and also the final step.

To expand high-level conflicts throughout the entire force, plunging it into complete chaos, making any future development or progress impossible.

Lü Yang called this the Four-Step Strategy of the Primordial Saint Sect.

Any force that went through this process would never rise again.

It would be reduced to nothing more than a subsidiary of the Saint Sect.

Inside a quiet chamber at the Immortal Alliance headquarters.

Lü Yang held his breath and focused.

With the Immortal Alliance's rule over the Sea of Chaos overturned, he finally extracted a wisp of hazy smoke from the Foundation Establishment Realm.

“It's done!”

Though the smoke was hazy, it carried an unprecedented heaviness, as if it bore the thoughts and wills of countless beings.

This was Wu Earth, the Life Governor of All Things, the Celestial Pole's 【Zhuo Wei】 !

As Lü Yang toppled the old system of the Immortal Alliance, this invisible “mountain” had finally materialized into Qi, obediently settling in his palm.

“So unbelievably smooth.”

Lü Yang sighed.

It had been a long time since things had gone this smoothly for him.

Now that he had acquired the Wu Earth Qi, he could attempt to break through to the mid-stage at any moment!

However, the 【Yin Fire】 that awaited him at the mid-stage was not to be underestimated.

To break through rashly would be far too risky.

To be safe, he decided to return to the Saint Sect and consult with True Person Chong Guang to see if there were any methods to avoid disaster.

It would be more prudent to prepare thoroughly before attempting the breakthrough.

“In that case, you are no longer of any use.”

Lü Yang took out the 【Sanjiu Soul-Dissolving Gourd】 and gave it a gentle shake.

The twelve Integration-stage cultivators of the Immortal Alliance were immediately shaken out, falling to the ground in a sorry state.

Without giving them a chance to wake up, Lü Yang directly summoned the 【Abi Sword】 .

Whoosh, whoosh—!

Sword light flashed.

In an instant, the twelve Integration-stage cultivators were decapitated.

Although their true spirits had not dissipated and could possibly return from the 【Imperial Palace Golden Talisman Doushuai True Decree】 given enough time, their pseudo-Foundation Establishment flesh and Qi had been completely drained by the 【Abi Sword】 .

The next moment, Lü Yang’s face lit up with delight.

Twelve pseudo-Foundation Establishment cultivators, though inferior to true Foundation Establishment, had still enhanced the sword’s power.

Unexpectedly, this had granted the 【Abi Sword】 a new ability!

This brand-new ability was called 【Stepping on Danger】 .

However, what surprised Lü Yang was that this was not an offensive ability, but an auxiliary one.

It allowed the sword wielder to sense their own life-threatening crises in advance.

“This overlaps with the Heaven-Seeking Instrument.”

Lü Yang frowned slightly.

With the Heaven-Seeking Instrument protecting him, he could already sense any karmic entanglements.

He had little use for 【Stepping on Danger】 .

While pondering, Lü Yang casually activated the 【Abi Sword】 .

However, in the next moment—

As the sword light bathed his entire body, the 【Stepping on Danger】 ability activated.

Lü Yang felt his mind suddenly elevate.

Then he saw the top of his own head.

【Danger】 !

A massive crimson character floated above him.

It existed outside of karma, yet hovered high above, filling him with an unprecedented sense of danger.

“What is... this!?”

Lü Yang had thought there were no fatal karmic threads on him.

Yet the scene revealed through 【Stepping on Danger】 made his expression change drastically.

Indeed, there were no deadly karmic entanglements on him.

Because the danger came from Heaven and Earth!

Karma was merely the result of entangled fates between people.

When a person harbored killing intent, karma was born.

But when Heaven harbored killing intent, how could anyone detect it?

This was completely different from the Heavenly Punishment that had occurred when he detonated the Skeleton Mountain’s leyline.

Heavenly Punishment was a punishment—a declaration from Heaven to all beings about what must not be done.

Its display was grand and well-known, and could even be calculated.

But the Heavenly Killing intent that appeared now showed no such signs.

Heaven and Earth were merciless, treating all beings as straw dogs.

It was like a species being naturally eliminated from the food chain, going extinct without a trace.

Heaven's killing intent was the same—subtle, silent, and seemingly inevitable.

Suddenly, Lü Yang felt something and looked up at the sky.

In a trance, he seemed to see a lantern.

A golden lamp radiating light.

A jade platform blooming brightly.

It illuminated neither the sun nor the moon, brightening Heaven and Earth in ways unseen.

It hung high in the firmament.

【Overturned Lamp Fire】

“Hong Yun!?”

In an instant, Lü Yang finally realized the truth.

In this world, the only one capable of wielding the **【Overturned Lamp Fire】** was Hong Yun, the reincarnated Golden Core True Lord, who had once held this position of authority!

“It must at least be a Fruit Position Treasure... and it involves karma and fate, otherwise it couldn't have catalyzed such a Heaven-and-Earth killing intent aimed specifically at me!”

Hong Yun wants to kill me!?

Share to your friends

Tip: You can use left, right keyboard keys to browse between chapters.

[1,422 words]

“There is no time to lose, let's leave tonight!”

After exiting the wondrous vision brought by the Abyss Sword 【Treading Danger】 , Lü Yang immediately made a decision.

Now that he had obtained the Qi of Earth of the Wu element, he could no longer stay in this overseas land!

Thinking of this, Lü Yang felt somewhat regretful.

It was a pity that his cultivation was insufficient, and the distance between overseas and the mainland was too great.

Otherwise, he could have used 【Fixing Closeness and Distance】 to return to the Primordial Saint Sect in one step.

In the next second, Lü Yang rode a streak of escape light, quietly leaving the Immortal Alliance without alerting anyone.

As for the aftermath of Biyang Cultivation World and the Immortal Alliance, since the Qi of Earth of the Wu element was already in his hands, he had no interest in managing it any longer.

It was just perfect that he could also shake off that troublesome hot potato Guang Ming.

Lü Yang even chose to give up the opportunity of acquiring First-Grade True Qi of the Grand Completion Stage.

‘Not to mention that it might be a trap set by an Innate True Person, even if it wasn’t, given my current state of being locked on by Heaven and Earth’s killing intent, going there would be more perilous than fortunate.’

It was better to give it up!

At worst, once he returned to the Saint Sect, he could immediately report Daoist Hong Yun to True Person Chong Guang.

Let True Person Chong Guang eat the meat, and he could have some soup.

A man’s worth lay in knowing his limits.

Cross the river by feeling the stones; wear the pants that fit your bottom.

Three days after Lü Yang’s departure, Guang Ming finally noticed something was wrong.

When he came to seek an audience, he discovered that the secluded chamber where Lü Yang had previously gone into closed-door cultivation was already empty.

“He ran away?”

Guang Ming blinked, completely unable to understand Lü Yang’s thinking.

But soon, a wave of ecstasy surged in his heart.

It was best that the great devil had run away!

After all, the Immortal Alliance had already been slaughtered by Lü Yang to the point where not a single grand cultivator in the Integration Stage was left.

And now that Lü Yang had fled, Guang Ming was the number one in Biyang Cultivation World!

How could he not quickly open the temple gates wide and aggressively recruit a wave of disciples to fill the 【Fulong Temple】 and strengthen his power?

For subordinate forces, different powers had different control methods.

Compared to Lü Yang’s “Four-Step Strategy of the Primordial Saint”, the Pure Land’s methods could be described as simple and brutal—directly preaching doctrines and forcibly converting people into Buddhist cultivators.

Among the Four Great Powers, the Pure Land was also the most stable.

Because the Pure Land’s cultivation philosophy emphasized “unity of Brahma and self”.

Since they were united, everyone was “self”, and naturally, stability followed.

However, soon he received a report from someone in the Immortal Alliance.

“At the port of the Chaotic Current Sea, another outsider cultivator has been spotted?”

Guang Ming was stunned when he heard this.

Before he could react, a figure dressed in black silently appeared in the originally empty great hall.

“Hmm? Bald donkey?”

As soon as these words were spoken, Guang Ming immediately realized something was wrong.

Across the world, the Dao Court and the Pure Land had always been friendly, mostly referring to each other as high monks.

As for the Sword Pavilion, being the leader of the righteous path, needed to maintain some semblance of dignity.

Though they disliked these Buddhist cultivators, they would not immediately call them bald donkeys.

At most, they would reluctantly call them scripture-chanting monks.

So who would call them bald donkeys?

It had to be another True Person from the Primordial Saint Sect!

Guang Ming couldn't help but sigh in his heart.

Amitabha, just out of the tiger's den, only to enter the wolf's lair... How bitter!

In the next second, Guang Ming smoothly slid to his knees and said, "Little monk Guang Ming pays respects. May I ask senior's name?"

"Primordial Saint Sect, Wu Cang."

The black-robed Daoist's voice was cold and eerie.

"This place is quite interesting. Bald donkey, since you are a Buddhist cultivator of the Pure Land, you must have methods to treat physical injuries, right?"

Wu Cang had not been having a good time recently.

After fleeing far overseas, he had been searching for a place to heal.

But although the overseas territory was vast and boundless, it was barren.

Moreover, he was not skilled in divining the heavenly secrets.

Thus, he had expended great effort before finally finding Biyang Cultivation World.

As a result, after all this time, his injuries had not improved at all.

Even now, there was still a glaring scarlet sword mark on his waist and abdomen.

If he did not seal it with his magical power, blood would even seep out.

"Replying to senior, this little monk has a bottle of Vajra Liquid."

Guang Ming cautiously handed over a porcelain bottle.

Wu Cang took it without hesitation and said, “You bald donkeys never do anything without seeking profit.”

“Speak, what opportunities lie in this place?”

Guang Ming’s eye twitched, cursing in his heart.

However, his expression remained unchanged as he continued, “To this little monk, the opportunity lies with the overseas cultivators here.”

“However, the cultivation methods of the cultivators here are quite ingenious, based on a strange treasure.”

“This little monk admits his strength is low and dares not touch such great karma, so he has never claimed it.”

“If senior is interested, you may go and take a look. Perhaps that treasure is destined for you.”

Guang Ming naturally had other intentions in saying this.

Although he did not know the origin of the 【Imperial Palace Golden Seal Doushuai True Edict】 , any treasure that could allow one to falsely attain Foundation Establishment must have an unimaginable background.

It was perfect to let Wu Cang deal with it.

If it was truly an opportunity, Wu Cang would surely be delighted and might spare his life.

If it was a trap, Wu Cang would die, and what did it have to do with him?

Wu Cang was naturally unaware of Guang Ming’s scheming.

However, he did not care either.

After all, a newly advanced Arhat at the early Foundation Establishment Stage was someone he was confident he could easily suppress even in his current heavily injured state.

Soon, under Guang Ming’s lead, Wu Cang arrived at the deepest shrine of the Immortal Alliance.

The moment they entered, the appearance of the 【Imperial Palace Golden Seal Doushuai True Edict】 came into his view.

It was as if a fierce wind had suddenly blown away all his distracting thoughts, making him stand there in a daze.

‘What is this thing!?’

In the next moment, the seal script on the 【Imperial Palace Golden Seal Doushuai True Edict】 slowly wriggled.

Suddenly, it outlined a face that seemed both real and illusory!

Golden eyes met Wu Cang’s gaze.

Immediately after, Wu Cang’s lips opened involuntarily.

A hoarse and dry voice emerged, sending chills down Guang Ming’s spine:

“Why... is it not Innate?”

Swoosh——!

Without any hesitation, Guang Ming’s figure disappeared from where he stood.

In the blink of an eye, he had already fled thousands of miles away.

With another blink, he returned to the hall.

“Ah!?”

In an instant, Guang Ming was drenched in sweat, his heart ice-cold.

With a stiff expression, he slowly turned his head, only to see the face formed by the 【Imperial Palace Golden Seal Doushuai True Edict】 staring at him with great interest.

On the other side, Wu Cang was wearing the same expression, staring straight at him.

‘It’s over!’

Guang Ming’s Buddhist teeth trembled violently.

He wished he could strangle the self that had suggested Wu Cang come here.

How did things suddenly take such a strange turn?

He had seen this 【Imperial Palace Golden Seal Doushuai True Edict】 before.

But it had never shown such changes when he had come before.

Who would have thought that the moment Wu Cang arrived, the situation changed!

Why?

At this moment, the pale golden face finally spoke again.

However, the voice came from Wu Cang's mouth and had become much more fluent:

“Interesting, interesting.”

“Not the legacy of that old Innate bastard, yet able to stir the karma here and awaken me. Was this great karma prepared especially for me?”

As the words fell, Wu Cang himself began to change.

His aura shifted from initially fierce to scholarly and elegant.

His voice also gradually became more composed and calm.

His injuries visibly healed without any medicine.

His brows lifted slightly, his muscles stretched and bones extended.

In the blink of an eye, he had transformed into a completely different person!

“To borrow this body, I must bear its karma.”

“【Wu Cang kills Lü Yang】?”

The “Wu Cang” muttered softly, as if contemplating something.

After a long while, he suddenly laughed loudly:

“Very well, from today on, I am 【Wu Cang】!”

Share to your friends

Tip: You can use left, right keyboard keys to browse between chapters.

[1,474 words]

At this moment, Guang Ming desperately wished Lü Yang was here.

After all, if Lü Yang were here, with his strength he could have easily dealt with Wu Cang, there would have been no need to bring him here, and none of this would have happened.

'What the hell is this thing!'

'That Wu Cang... is a mid-Foundation Establishment cultivator! Yet he was so easily possessed? Who on earth is this? A reincarnated True Lord? A peak Foundation Establishment Great True Person?'

At this moment, Guang Ming's thoughts were a complete mess.

It was not until 【Wu Cang】 turned his head to look at him that the 【Imperial Palace Golden Seal Dou Shuai True Edict】 gradually dimmed and reverted back to the appearance of a talisman.

"You're quite interesting too."

【Wu Cang】 smiled slightly, "The biggest karmic entanglement on your body points directly to that Lü Yang. Seems like he's made quite a few enemies, huh? Someone from the Primordial Saint Sect?"

Only 【Wu Cang】 himself knew how difficult it was to awaken, to be reborn through borrowing another's body, and to break free from the restrictions set by the Innate True Person.

After all, back then the dying Innate True Person had almost exhausted all his power to activate his innate divine ability, using great karma to imprison it in place.

Without the fulfillment of karmic destiny, it could never leave.

And that karma was the successor of the Innate True Person, only when that successor held the Myriad Spirits Banner and used it to guide, could it safely emerge.

But in doing so, it would have to willingly be refined by the Myriad Spirits Banner.

And with the Myriad Spirits Banner's dominance, once refined, it would be enslaved for all eternity, which was exactly the outcome the Innate True Person desired.

However, now, a new opportunity had arisen.

The appearance of Wu Cang gave it a second choice, because Wu Cang was no longer Lü Yang's match, yet the two were already bound by karmic fate.

【Wu Cang killing Lü Yang】

In this situation, Wu Cang needed external power.

And it was that external power—if it was willing to take on Wu Cang’s identity and accept the karma of killing Lü Yang, it could break free from the Innate True Person’s restraints.

Such a heaven-sent opportunity, how could it possibly let it go?

In the next moment, 【Wu Cang】’s gaze fell upon Guang Ming, and Guang Ming was horrified to find golden radiance emerging from his own body.

“This is your karma.”

Perhaps because it had finally broken free, 【Wu Cang】 seemed in a particularly talkative mood, “The Bodhisattva who sent you here was quite kind, even magnifying your karma.”

“At least two True Lord techniques have been used in this matter—one sent this Wu Cang to me, helping me to break free, and the other sent you to me, ensuring that I could immediately find the target to kill upon escaping. Now, I truly wish to meet this Lü Yang.”

Curiosity filled 【Wu Cang】’s face.

After all, according to what it knew, even in the talent-rich Primordial Saint Sect, there were very few True Persons capable of attracting such hatred and triggering a killing scheme like this.

“Come with me.”

In the next second, 【Wu Cang】 lifted Guang Ming with one hand and, at the same time, tore off the bright karmic thread from him.

Karma as the guide, tracking across ten thousand miles.

Right after, 【Wu Cang】 took a single step forward——

“This 【danger】 is getting bigger and bigger.”

Above the vast and boundless ocean, Lü Yang piloted the 【Void Crossing Golden Ship】 , almost turning into a stream of light, stirring up massive waves as he sped toward the mainland.

However, the 【danger】 above his head did not diminish in the slightest, but instead grew even bloodier.

“Such a change... could it be that I made the wrong choice?” Lü Yang was filled with doubt, for if he had not made the wrong decision, why would the crisis be getting closer?

What on earth was happening?

This was the first time Lü Yang felt a bit powerless, as if he had once again become that self in the Qi Refining stage who could not calculate karma and could only be manipulated by fate.

But in the next moment, Lü Yang shook off all distracting thoughts.

Compared to back then, he was now completely different.

Even if he could not calculate the source of the crisis, he was not without the power to resist.

With this in mind, the 【Command Jade Token】 bestowed by True Person Chong Guang was already in his hand.

However, perhaps due to excessive nervousness, his hand trembled, and the 【Command Jade Token】 slipped from his palm.

Fortunately, another hand quickly reached out, catching the falling 【Command Jade Token】 before it hit the ground, followed by a soft laugh:

“Be careful, Daoist friend.”

At this moment, time seemed to come to a standstill, and a handsome youth with fluttering robes appeared in a flash from across ten thousand miles, landing beside Lü Yang!

Boom!

Before the words had even fallen, at this critical moment, the 【Command Jade Token】 in the youth’s hand suddenly exploded, and from within walked out a figure.

Almost simultaneously, divine brilliance flashed across Lü Yang’s body.

【Determining Closeness and Distance】 !

In the next second, Lü Yang vanished from where he stood, leaving only 【Wu Cang】 and the figure who had emerged from the 【Command Jade Token】 staring at each other in surprise.

“Hm? A Dao Sin...”

The figure who emerged from the 【Command Jade Token】 was a middle-aged man with a sinister expression, who showed a look of surprise the moment he saw 【Wu Cang】 .

However, in the next instant, an indescribable mighty force crashed down.

With a crisp sound like a shattering silver bottle, the middle-aged man’s figure was instantly wiped away.

But at the same time, the extraordinary aura surrounding 【Wu Cang】 also plummeted to the extreme.

For a moment, all things fell into a deathly stillness.

The power that collided here had completely surpassed the Foundation Establishment level, an unspeakable might that caused heaven and earth to fall silent.

Only after a long time did a figure slowly emerge.

“...Bastard!!!”

【Wu Cang】 stood in mid-air, holding the unconscious Guang Ming in his hand, his face grim, “Just like the Innate True Person, it’s a karmic life force...”

Originally, at the moment he appeared, Lü Yang had been as good as dead.

The 【Command Jade Token】 was indeed powerful, but it needed to be activated—without activation, it was nothing more than scrap iron.

Originally, 【Wu Cang】 had not intended to give Lü Yang the chance to activate it.

However, Lü Yang’s innate divine ability had exceeded his expectations, forcibly maintaining a moment of clarity, and in that brief instant, he had activated the 【Command Jade Token】 .

This had broken through 【Wu Cang】’s blockade, not only landing a heavy blow on him but also allowing Lü Yang to escape successfully.

“You think you can get away?”

【Wu Cang】’s expression turned cold as he licked his lips and continued to tug on the karmic thread from Guang Ming’s body, locking onto Lü Yang’s location before stepping forward again.

Swoosh swoosh——!

This time, he was greeted by a boundless sea of blood.

【Blood Sea Overwhelming Heaven Grand Formation】 !

Hundreds of millions of tons of seawater, empowered by the rank of the Abyss Sword, surged into a monstrous wave crashing down toward 【Wu Cang】 .

Yet 【Wu Cang】 remained indifferent to this.

With a single glance, he locked onto Lü Yang within the formation.

In that instant, Lü Yang felt his consciousness slightly sink under 【Wu Cang】 's gaze, as if he saw a giant hand reaching toward him.

Wherever the giant hand passed, the sea of blood, the sword qi—all dissolved like melting ice and snow, unable to persist in the world.

The two sides were clearly not on the same level.

As the giant hand was about to pierce through the formation and land on his neck, Lü Yang finally unleashed his divine ability.

【Separate with Difference】 !

A refreshing sensation swept through his sea of consciousness, clearing his mind once again.

Divine brilliance struggled to appear, helping Lü Yang to vanish from the spot once more.

【Determining Closeness and Distance】 !

Lü Yang's repeated disappearance finally erased the confident smile that had been on 【Wu Cang】 's face, replacing it with a trace of coldness.

Meanwhile, nearly ten thousand miles away.

“Wu Cang...?”

Lü Yang's figure emerged from the void with divine brilliance, his face still filled with shock, as he had already recognized the attacker.

However, he simply could not understand how Wu Cang, who had almost been cut in half by him just days ago, had suddenly transformed into a supreme being he could not hope to resist.

Even a peak Foundation Establishment Great True Person was probably no more than this.

What on earth had happened in between?

Crack!

Like shattering glazed glass, a crisp sound rang out beside Lü Yang.

Then, Lü Yang saw a crack—and on the other side of the crack was 【Wu Cang】 .

“Daoist friend, please stay.”

The voice carried a strange magic, making Lü Yang, despite his utmost reluctance, involuntarily stand still, choosing to surrender.

No way to escape to the heavens! No way to escape to the earth!

Dead for sure!?

Share to your friends

Tip: You can use left, right keyboard keys to browse between chapters.

[1,636 words]

Until this moment, Lü Yang had not given up.

Facing 【Wu Cang】 , who stepped out from the crack and reached toward him, Lü Yang’s mind instead became incomparably calm in that instant.

‘Not a True Person!’

‘If a True Person wanted to kill me, it would be impossible for me to escape.’

‘But it is related to a True Person, yet not Hong Yun. Is this something born from Heaven and Earth’s killing intent to kill me?’

‘Where did it come from?’

While he was thinking, the Myriad Spirits Banner had already appeared in front of Lü Yang.

Su Nu, Chen Xin'an, and all the banner spirits emerged at this moment.

“Explode!”

In the next second, under Lü Yang's control, all the banner spirits, including the two at Foundation Establishment Realm, exploded with a thunderous blast!

The shockwave from the shattering of the Dao Foundations even caused the Foundation Establishment Realm to tremble, making 【Wu Cang】's figure sway slightly, and his actions came to an abrupt halt, buying Lü Yang precious time to survive.

Almost at the same time, the light from the 【Qixia Robe】 on his body burst forth brilliantly.

This spiritual treasure given to him by True Person Chong Guang now served as the final barrier, blocking 【Wu Cang】's reaching fingertip.

Rip!

In the next moment, Lü Yang disappeared from the spot for the third time, while 【Wu Cang】 was left holding a shredded 【Qixia Robe】.

However, at this moment, 【Wu Cang】's face was filled with surprise.

“It's actually the Myriad Spirits Banner?”

He frowned, reaching out to grasp the lingering smoke from the self-destruction of the banner spirits, carefully sensing it, and then revealed a puzzled expression.

“It is indeed the Myriad Spirits Banner, but it seems not to be the innate one. It lacks innate karma. What's going on? Could it be that the method of crafting the Myriad Spirits Banner has been passed down? Impossible, that guy always thought the Myriad Spirits Banner was too vicious, how could he let it spread?”

For a moment, 【Wu Cang】's curiosity grew immensely.

“You slippery little brat, I'd like to see how many more times you can escape!”

With this thought, 【Wu Cang】 immediately cast a spell again, pulling the karma line on Guang Ming, and pursued along the karmic connection between Guang Ming and Lü Yang.

At this moment, 【Wu Cang】's entire attention was focused on Lü Yang.

Therefore, he did not notice that the Guang Ming in his hand had, at some point, quietly opened his eyes, revealing a pair of eyes overflowing with Buddhist light and filled with compassion.

“Grandmaster, what is that thing?”

After fleeing again, Lü Yang activated the Myriad Spirits Banner and summoned the only banner spirit he had not detonated, none other than the long-silent Grandmaster Ting You.

Although Grandmaster Ting You now had not even a fraction of his former strength, not even at Foundation Establishment, his experience from having once reached the peak of Foundation Establishment was still significant, and his insight far surpassed Lü Yang's.

What Lü Yang could not discern, Grandmaster Ting You might.

And indeed, this was the case.

“That is a Dao Calamity.”

Grandmaster Ting You spoke without any hesitation, “A cultivator who fails in seeking the Golden Core and cannot withstand Dao Transformation will, after death, transform into a Dao Calamity.”

Upon hearing this, Lü Yang suddenly understood.

‘Dao Calamity... it's an Innate True Person!’

Lü Yang instantly recalled the jade disc that the great Dao Integration cultivator Elder Lin had given him before.

【To die seeking gold, without regret in death;

the body transforms into a Dao Calamity, leaving grace to future generations;

hold my banner, enter my place of gold-seeking, refine it, and you may prove First-Grade Great Ascension True Qi!】

‘So, the current 【Wu Cang】 has already been possessed by a Dao Calamity formed from the failure of an Innate True Person in seeking the Golden Core?’

‘But why does it want to kill me?’

'What a pity, Heaven and Earth's killing intent has no cause or reason, I can't calculate anything.'

'This must be Hong Yun's doing. At worst, I'll check it out in my next lifetime.'

Yes, Lü Yang had already started thinking about the next lifetime.

He had no choice.

【Wu Cang】's strength had completely surpassed what he could handle, and likely only a perfected Foundation Establishment Great True Person could fight him.

This gap was no longer something human effort could bridge.

So, Lü Yang's current goal had shifted from escaping alive to probing as much as he could about 【Wu Cang】's background and motives, preparing for the next lifetime.

In the next second, the void cracked open.

【Wu Cang】 stepped out.

This time, Lü Yang had no protective means left and could only watch helplessly as 【Wu Cang】 came before him and extended a finger.

'Hundred Lifetimes...'

Lü Yang silently recited in his heart, ready to self-destruct and reset.

However, at that moment, in a flash, the gears of time seemed to come to a halt, and Heaven and Earth turned into a still painting.

All sounds ceased.

Immediately after, a melodious chant broke the silence.

Magnificent and solemn Buddhist light flowed from Guang Ming, who was in 【Wu Cang】's hand.

Within the Buddhist light, temples stood tall, and meditation forests appeared one after another, finally sketching out a vast and indescribable Pure Land.

At the very front of the Pure Land stood 【Fulong Temple】, and in front of the temple stood a white-clad woman holding a jade vase in her hand.

"Layman Lü, it has been a long time."

The crisp and pleasant voice fell like a mountain stream, cleansing the body and mind, making Lü Yang's thoughts momentarily clear, yet his expression grew even more serious.

“So it's the Bodhisattva herself.”

Lü Yang bowed with cupped hands, for the white-clad woman before him was none other than the Pure Land True Person who had appeared in the battle for the Dao — 【Bodhisattva of the Precious Vase and Water Moon】 !

‘So Guang Ming really had a problem!’

While bowing, Lü Yang cursed inwardly.

First a Dao Calamity, then a True Person — a bunch of shameless old geezers ganging up on a junior like me. Where is the True Person from the Primordial Saint Sect? Where are my allies? Can someone come save me?

“You misunderstand, layman.”

In front of 【Fulong Temple】 , the white-clad woman smiled gently with a compassionate expression, “This body is merely an incarnation of the true body, temporarily manifesting through Guang Ming.”

“The true body's reward form still resides in the Pure Land and has not moved. Otherwise, the True Persons of the Demon Sect would surely have sensed it.”

“Therefore, I can only delay slightly for you, layman, and cannot truly save you. Under Heaven and Earth's killing intent, if you wish to live, you must save yourself.”

Lü Yang frowned at these words. “Save myself?”

“Indeed.” The white-clad woman's expression became even more sincere. “The Demon Sect is unrighteous, but my Pure Land is willing to open the door of convenience wide and offer you a path to survival.”

“ 【Fulong Temple】 is right here.”

“As long as you are willing to integrate your Dao Foundation into Fulong Temple, you can immediately replace Guang Ming. I am willing to personally shave your head and grant you the Dharma name of Arhat.”

Invite me to join the Pure Land!?

In an instant, Lü Yang finally understood the karmic connection between himself and Guang Ming — it was a tactic by the Pure Land to pull him into their camp!

No, it wasn't just that.

'If I'm not mistaken, this Dao Calamity was able to find me so easily likely because the Pure Land also helped... all to first drive me to a deathtrap.'

'Only then could they force me to join the Pure Land.'

This was an open scheme!

If he did not join the Pure Land, he would die!

At this moment, Lü Yang fell silent.

If it were the Dao Court or the Sword Pavilion, he might have considered accepting, and could even take the chance to probe their depths.

But the Pure Land was different.

Because the cultivation method of the Pure Land was "Brahman and Self as One", transforming oneself into a "self" of the World-Honored One of the Pure Land — a change based on consciousness.

And Lü Yang didn't know whether 【Book of a Hundred Lifetimes】 could erase such a consciousness change!

If it couldn't, and this influence carried over into the next lifetime, then he would be truly doomed.

Even if there was only a one in ten thousand risk, he would not take the gamble.

So Lü Yang had never considered joining the Pure Land.

"Hoo."

Thinking of this, Lü Yang immediately exhaled a deep breath.

He activated a minor divine ability he had not used for a long time.

With slightly parted lips, he uttered a single word — kill.

Killing Curse!

Self-destruction!

In the next instant, under the astonished and puzzled gaze of the white-clad woman, Lü Yang's dharma body collapsed with a loud bang, leaving only a single thought drifting in the void.

"Book of a Hundred Lifetimes!"

In an instant, the Book of a Hundred Lifetimes activated, and all scenes blurred.

White clouds, blue skies, the great sea, and even 【Wu Cang】's figure all faded one by one.

Until this erasing power fell upon the white-clad woman.

However, what happened next completely exceeded Lü Yang's expectations, causing his previously calm mind to suddenly surge with overwhelming waves.

He saw the originally dimming white-clad woman suddenly raise her head.

Her eyes shone with Buddhist light, but unlike the earlier compassion, they now revealed an utterly different aura — a domineering presence that declared "I alone reign supreme over Heaven and Earth".

".Hmm?"

A soft exclamation sounded within what should have been the exclusive domain of 【Book of a Hundred Lifetimes】.

It was very faint, yet unmistakably clear, spreading out like a whisper.

Lü Yang froze instantly.

Then he heard a fragmented, surprised voice:

"What are... you... doing?"

Before the voice could finish, 【Book of a Hundred Lifetimes】 had already turned to a brand new page.

The white-clad woman's voice abruptly stopped, and her figure, along with those clearly belonging to someone else — those eyes filled with Buddhist light — were completely erased from existence.

Heaven and Earth fell silent once more.

Everything began again.

Share to your friends

Tip: You can use left, right keyboard keys to browse between chapters.

Chapter 178: Restart Again, Breakthrough to the Mid Stage!

[1,563 words]

【Faced with the pincer attack of Dao Sin and Pure Land, you chose the third path and resolutely self-destructed. Your life could completely be described as legendary.】

【Current remaining pages of the Book of a Hundred Lifetimes: 92】

【Restarting a new lifetime, you may choose one of the following gains from your previous life:

One: Treasure.

Two: Cultivation.

Three: Lifespan.

Four: Give up all gains and randomly awaken a talent based on your past life experience.】

Atop Mount Luofeng, Lü Yang opened his eyes but remained dazed for a long while, the golden eyes filled with Buddha light still lingering in his mind.

The howling wind at the mountaintop seemed to vanish in that moment, the only sound Lü Yang could hear was the violent pounding of his heart from fear, as sweat uncontrollably dripped down, soaking him in no time.

His mouth was slightly open, yet it seemed he had forgotten how to breathe, as if frozen.

After a long while, Lü Yang finally squeezed out a sound from his throat.

"Shit!"

What the hell was that thing that appeared in the end!?

That was clearly not the woman in white, nor the Golden Core True Lord of Pure Land, but someone completely different!

In an instant, a thought emerged: "...The World Honored One?"

Lü Yang felt a chill run through his mind, for the Golden Core True Lords, the Bodhisattvas of Pure Land, strictly speaking, had already reached the ultimate state of "Brahma and Self as One".

In other words, every Pure Land Bodhisattva who appeared to possess independent consciousness might have long since refined themselves into one of the World Honored One's incarnations.

So long as that Pure Land World Honored One willed it, he could descend into any of those bodies at any time, and the mighty power of the 【Book of a Hundred Lifetimes】 had clearly alarmed that World Honored One!

"He even fucking spoke!"

Lü Yang panted heavily, and after a long while, he managed to dispel the fear in his heart.

However, his dread toward Pure Land had risen to an unprecedented level.

Not long ago, he had still been lamenting that things had been "too smooth".

As a result, first came Dao Sin, then the True Lord, and finally even the World Honored One of Pure Land appeared, instantly crushing the arrogance that had just risen in his heart.

This world was too dangerous!

The gap between realms was already vast enough, but the key issue was that those mighty figures loved bullying the weak, shamelessly coming to the newbie village to fish for small fries.

At this thought, Lü Yang immediately made a decision:

"This 【Earth atop the City Wall】 , forget it!"

The karmic burden was too heavy.

How could he live with a Golden Core True Lord targeting him at the Foundation Establishment early stage?

It was better to find a way to jump ship and escape as soon as possible.

Lü Yang had already made his plan.

"First, I will do my best to improve my cultivation at the second anchor point and uncover the secrets of the Biyang Cultivation World, to see if it's truly possible to cultivate that so-called First-Grade True Qi of the Great Ascension."

"Then, I will investigate whether there is manipulation behind this from an Innate True Person."

"If everything checks out, or if I have ways to counter it, I will return to the first anchor point with the cultivation method of the First-Grade True Qi and start over!"

What garbage Nine Transforming Dragon Art, it only led to Third-Grade True Qi, I don't need it anymore!

By then, I would start with First-Grade True Qi and already have the experience of Foundation Establishment.

It would not take long to rebuild my cultivation, and that would be the true great Dao!

At the same time, Lü Yang also came to a realization:

"My cheat is still not strong enough!"

With this in mind, Lü Yang gritted his teeth and opened the panel of the **【Book of a Hundred Lifetimes】**, this time choosing the second anchor point, when he was at his peak state.

【Name: Lü Yang】

【Lifespan: 100 years】

【Cultivation: Foundation Establishment Early Stage】

【Talent: Dual Cultivation Prodigy (White), Somewhat Capable (Purple)】

【Dao Foundation: Myriad Chariots Dragon-Riding Dao Foundation】

【Divine Ability: Dragon-Riding Chariot (Determine closeness, resolve doubts, distinguish sameness and difference, clarify right and wrong)】

【Treasures: Innate Primordial Qi (Superior Rare Treasure), Myriad Spirits Banner (Superior Spiritual Treasure), Abi Sword (Superior Spiritual Treasure), Sky Surveying Instrument (Superior Spiritual Treasure), Thirty-Nine Soul-Dissolving Gourd (Medium Spiritual Treasure)】

【Pages of the Book of a Hundred Lifetimes: 92】

【Number of Anchor Points: 0】

Lü Yang did not hesitate at all and directly chose 【Treasure】 , redeeming the Earth Qi of Wu Earth that he had painstakingly obtained in his previous life.

Although he could have chosen talent, that would have forced him to go overseas again.

Too dangerous, it was better to play it safe.

Soon, a wisp of formless, causeless smoke fell into Lü Yang's palm.

"Now that I have the Earth Qi of Wu Earth, I no longer need to seek fortunes overseas. I will directly begin preparing for the breakthrough to Foundation Establishment Mid Stage!"

Lü Yang had already made his plans for this.

First, he intended to replicate the actions of his previous life.

Endure until the death of Arhat Fulong.

Then, join the family of the Mending Heaven Peak Master and obtain Chen Shuqian's Vermilion Bird Noon Fire.

This time, Lü Yang did not waste any more time.

After using the Vermilion Bird Noon Fire to heal his injuries, he decisively began fusing with the Wu Earth Qi, fully prepared mentally.

"This breakthrough is risky, strictly speaking, because I don't know how powerful the calamity of advancing to Foundation Establishment Mid Stage is, nor the true strength of the 【Yin Fire】 . There is a possibility of failure... but it doesn't matter. If I fail, I'll just restart and choose a talent next time."

Under his deliberate replication, this lifetime's experience was not much different from the previous one.

Although he skipped the overseas journey, enduring the death of Arhat Fulong and publicly stunning the Mending Heaven Peak Master's family still made his name resound throughout the Primordial Saint Sect.

The talent born from this should not be too bad.

“Bet it all!”

With this thought, Lü Yang cast aside all hesitation.

His Dao Foundation manifested, and the magnificent 【Dragon-Riding Chariot】 , drawn by four dragons, appeared within his Foundation Establishment realm.

Immediately after, the Wu Earth Qi emerged.

One of the four flood dragons pulling the chariot raised its neck and, without deviation, swallowed the Wu Earth Qi.

The first Heavenly Gang fusion, complete!

Lü Yang furrowed his brows tightly, carefully sensing the changes in his Dao Foundation and his innate divine ability.

Very soon, he noticed a mysterious fluctuation arising in one of the intricacies of his innate divine ability.

“This is... 【Distinguish Sameness and Difference】 ?”

Lü Yang calculated with his fingers, his thoughts racing: "I deliberately chose the Hour of the Tiger for this breakthrough. At this moment, the Qi of the Earthly Fiend position 【She Ti Star】 is at its strongest."

At this moment, fusing with the Heavenly Gang perfectly aligned with the Wu Earth's intersection at 【She Ti Star】 .

From this, a talent divine ability was born,

Named 【Embracing the Mountain】 !

"In the time before the Primordial Chaos split, embracing one to guard the center, able to distinguish sameness and difference... so this is it. The mystery of talent divine abilities and innate divine abilities are actually connected!"

Lü Yang instantly gained insight in his heart.

Why was it said that only Third-Grade True Qi had the hope of reaching Golden Core?

Because only a Dao Foundation built with Third-Grade True Qi would possess four intricacies in its innate divine ability, fully accommodating four talent divine abilities within itself!

Those below Third Grade, whether weak like True Person Huanwu of the Divine Martial Sect, or strong like Wu Cang, had at most one or three intricacies.

Not only was their current strength inferior to Lü Yang, but their future Dao path was also already predetermined.

They could not achieve a perfected Foundation Establishment, let alone seek to ascend to Golden Core.

Just then, Lü Yang suddenly felt a chill beneath his feet.

"...It's coming!"

Lü Yang immediately held his breath, watching as a pitch-black fire inexplicably emerged from his Yongquan Acupoint, sweeping all the way toward his Muddy Pellet Palace.

Wherever the 【Yin Fire】 passed, all five organs were incinerated!

Lü Yang remained calm.

While the 【Yin Fire】 burned his body, the Vermilion Bird Noon Fire continuously repaired it, creating a delicate balance between the two.

During this process, the 【Yin Fire】 also wrapped around his Dao Foundation, refining it like a pill furnace, with the Dao Foundation as the furnace and his innate divine ability along with the Wu Earth Qi as the ingredients inside.

If he could endure until the Wu Earth Qi transformed into a talent divine ability, the tribulation would be considered overcome.

However, as time passed, the recovery speed gradually fell behind the burning speed.

"My Vermilion Bird Noon Fire alone isn't enough."

Fortunately, he had a backup plan.

Lü Yang sighed and immediately called Chen Shuqian in.

There was no other way.

The effect of the Vermilion Bird Noon Fire refined by both of them together was better.

Though he was not fond of carnal pleasures and felt somewhat reluctant, he had no choice but to go along with it.

Ten days later.

Lü Yang pushed aside the unconscious Chen Shuqian and walked out of the secret chamber feeling refreshed: "Ten days of bitter cultivation, countless efforts and sweat... I finally succeeded!"

As his words fell, within his Foundation Establishment realm, under layers of golden auspicious clouds, a towering mountain silhouette emerged from the 【Myriad Chariots Dragon-Riding Dao Foundation】 .

Talent Divine Ability, 【Embracing the Mountain】 , achieved!

Foundation Establishment Mid Stage!

Share to your friends

Tip: You can use left, right keyboard keys to browse between chapters.

[1,483 words]

At the peak of Mending Heaven Peak, Lü Yang stood with his hands behind his back.

Behind him, the graceful figure of Madam Ruo Xiang quietly appeared, her beautiful eyes filled with surprise and envy as she softly approached and said:

"Congratulations to Yuan Tu for reaching the mid-stage of Foundation Establishment, from now on longevity is within reach!"

She could not help but feel envious.

After all, they were both in the Foundation Establishment Realm, yet she had not even comprehended a single innate divine ability, let alone a gifted divine power.

Otherwise, she would not have been so eager to plot her reincarnation.

Compared to her, Lü Yang, who had only attained the Dao for less than a hundred years and was unimaginably young, had already broken through numerous barriers and reached the mid-stage of Foundation Establishment.

How could Madam Ruo Xiang not feel envious?

However, she was clever enough not to let this envy affect her state of mind.

"Madam flatters me."

Lü Yang listened to Madam Ruo Xiang's praise and merely smiled faintly, then turned his gaze inward, silently sensing the changes brought by this newly awakened gifted divine power.

【Embracing the Mountain】

At this moment, he saw a towering mountain shadow appear within his Dao Foundation, balancing the Qi and stabilizing the heavens and earth, locking all his merit and fortune within his body.

"So this is a gifted divine power."

Lü Yang murmured in his heart, feeling as if the world before his eyes had changed dramatically, gaining new insights into karma, fate, and even the very fabric of heaven and earth.

No wonder the gap between early and mid Foundation Establishment lay in whether one could awaken a gifted divine power.

It was not merely an additional powerful ability.

It was a fundamental enhancement of one's standing, with the gifted divine power significantly boosting the Dao Foundation and even transforming the innate divine power with immediate effect.

"Embrace unity and defend the center, distinguishing the different from the same."

As the name suggested, 【Embracing the Mountain】 not only possessed its own wondrous power but could also enhance Lü Yang's innate divine power, 【Distinguish the Different from the Same】 .

At this moment, when Lü Yang activated 【Distinguish the Different from the Same】 once again.

Countless lines of karma immediately appeared in his eyes, some bright, some dim, some thick, and some thin, densely packed.

These were all his karmic ties.

Among them, the most prominent was a black smoke that had almost tainted more than half of his karmic lines, wearing down his merit and fortune.

"Heavenly Tribulation Qi?"

In his previous lifetime, he could not even see this tribulation Qi, which led to him exposing a flaw before the Master of Mending Heaven Peak and nearly failing at the last moment.

But now, not only could he see the existence of this tribulation Qi.

As he activated 【Distinguish the Different from the Same】 , the towering mountain shadow within his Dao Foundation resonated with it.

Under the washing brilliance of the divine power, the layers of tribulation Qi were actually dispersed, causing his karmic lines to shine brightly once more.

And this was only the enhancement of his innate divine power.

In addition to this, 【Embracing the Mountain】 itself possessed both illusory and tangible transformations, truly extraordinary.

In its illusory form, it could stabilize the mind and fix divine powers.

In its tangible form, it could balance the Qi and stabilize the heavens and earth.

This was what Lü Yang valued the most: it was especially powerful when suppressing weaker opponents.

When 【Embracing the Mountain】 took its illusory form, it did not manifest physically but became a mountain pressing down on one's mind, which Lü Yang could place upon others with just a thought.

From then on, any cultivator suppressed by 【Embracing the Mountain】 would find it impossible to progress in cultivation.

Every step forward would cost hundreds or thousands of times more effort than others.

And if Lü Yang so wished, he could even forcibly reduce their cultivation, pressing someone at the peak of Qi Refining back down to the first layer!

Moreover, this effect could even be used against Foundation Establishment cultivators.

Before a battle of spells, he could first drop 【Embracing the Mountain】 onto his opponent, no matter how astonishing they were, it would unconditionally nullify one of their gifted divine powers!

Three powers would become two, two would become one.

And one would simply disappear!

"If I had 【Embracing the Mountain】 when I fought that Huanwu True Person from the Divine Martial Sect, he wouldn't have even been able to use his innate divine power."

How tyrannical!

Even more outrageous was that this suppressive ability could be freely chosen.

If desired, he could select any one divine power to suppress and erase.

Thus, it was extremely effective against those Foundation Establishment cultivators whose core combat abilities relied on a specific divine power.

For example, Wu Cang.

His strongest technique, 【Heavenly Furnace Departing Fire】 , was a combination of the divine wonder "Wood-born Fire" within his innate divine power and his gifted divine power 【Relentless Southbound】 .

At the time, it had caused Lü Yang considerable trouble.

But now, all Lü Yang needed was to smash him with 【Embracing the Mountain】 , suppress "Wood-born Fire," and instantly break Wu Cang's strongest technique!

Of course, this kind of nullification had its limitations.

First, once the targeted divine wonder was chosen, it could not be changed for a short period.

Secondly, it prevented the use of 【Embracing the Mountain】 's other abilities.

When 【Embracing the Mountain】 took its tangible form, it could balance the Qi and stabilize the heavens and earth.

As the name implied, it could manifest a mountain shadow that suppressed all the spiritual Qi, karma, and fortune within an area.

No matter how many transformations one had, it was extremely difficult to escape.

This made it a very powerful trapping technique.

"Damn it, it combines both mechanics and numerical power."

Opening his eyes, Lü Yang finally understood why the position of 【City Wall Earth】 was so highly sought after.

The related divine powers were either mechanic-based or numerically overwhelming.
Unfortunately, the karmic burden was too heavy.

"Although I will eventually have to abandon it, for now, it still has its uses."

"Perfect for settling old and new grudges together, I'll deal with a major threat to my heart today."

With that thought, Lü Yang raised his head and said:

"Come out, why sneak around?"

As his words fell, under the dark night and high winds, the figure of a black-clothed man silently emerged, with a familiar face but without the overwhelming aura from the previous life.

"The latest novel is first released on 69shu.com!"

"Inferior one, Wu Cang, greets Daoist Yuan Tu."

Hearing this, Lü Yang immediately smiled.

Though he knew well that the 【Wu Cang】 he last saw in his previous life was not the real Wu Cang, but a Dao Calamity Possession.

However, he was still no match for a Dao Calamity now.

Yet the suffocating resentment of being hunted down to self-destruction in his past life needed a target for release.

So he decided to settle the score with Wu Cang first!

"Yuan Tu, this man harbors ill intentions."

Madam Ruo Xiang beside him showed a worried expression, but Lü Yang waved his hand to make her step back before speaking:

"I understand your purpose, Daoist."

"Unfortunately, how could the hand-written letter of a True Monarch be given so lightly?"

As Lü Yang's words fell, Wu Cang's fake smile immediately faded, and he spoke coldly:

"So you want to suffer a little, Daoist?"

Lü Yang did not answer.

After breaking through to the mid-stage, he had seen some truths.

Wu Cang was originally a rogue cultivator who later joined the Primordial Saint Sect after reincarnation, retaining his rogue cultivator habits.

In short, most of his divine powers were focused on killing and had no involvement with karma.

Such people were too easily manipulated.

Thus, Wu Cang coming to cause trouble for him might not have been his true intention.

Thinking back to the heaven and earth killing intent upon him in his previous life, Lü Yang now suspected that it was likely the scheme of some great figure in the Primordial Saint Sect.

However, such manipulation could not come without a price.

Foundation Establishment cultivators stood beyond the mundane, with unique karmic threads.

To manipulate them would inevitably come at a cost, unlike the casual manipulation of Qi Refining cultivators.

In other words—

"Once karma is manipulated, any unexpected variable could trigger immediate backlash on the manipulator!"

And what was the variable?

The answer was obvious.

Since the opponent was using Wu Cang to deal with him, if he suddenly turned violent and killed Wu Cang, that would be the greatest variable!

With this thought, a crimson light flashed in Lü Yang's eyes.

No matter who was plotting against him—whether Daoist Hong Yun or another True Person of the Primordial Saint Sect—they could never have foreseen that he had already broken through to the mid-stage of Foundation Establishment!

After all, **【Embracing the Mountain】** itself had the ability to lock his merit and fortune.

From the moment of breakthrough, Lü Yang had kept all signs of advancement sealed within his body.

And with the Heavenly Observation Instrument concealing everything, not a single trace was revealed.

All of this had been in preparation for this very moment, to strike a heavy blow against the hidden mastermind!

Share to your friends

Tip: You can use left, right keyboard keys to browse between chapters.

[1,313 words]

For some reason, Wu Cang suddenly felt a chill.

It was like a bucket of cold water had been poured over his heart, dispersing all his restlessness and momentarily enlightening his previously clouded mind:

“Huh? Why did I come here?”

At that moment, the spiritual intuition of a Foundation Establishment True Person sounded a frantic warning.

Wu Cang instinctively looked around — could it be that his nighttime robbery had been discovered?

Up to this moment, Wu Cang still hadn't realized Lü Yang's threat.

He thought someone had merely detected his movements.

Part of this misunderstanding came from Lü Yang using 【Mountain of Embrace and Guard】 to conceal the flow of karma, making detection difficult.

But it was also because Wu Cang himself had been influenced by someone else's fate.

'Take this as a warning.'

Lü Yang silently took in everything, speaking to himself in his heart.

His ability to survive until now was largely due to his knack for learning from experience.

For example, he had already made up his mind to avoid Buddhist cultivators as much as possible from now on.

The reason was simple — Buddhist cultivators were too shameless.

Each of them claimed to be the “Self” of a World-Honored One, and would invoke their Dao Lord at the slightest disagreement.

It was like a max-level boss camping the newbie village and massacring fresh spawns!

It was utterly insane.

If not for the high status of the 【Book of a Hundred Lifetimes】 , which even the Dao Lords could only vaguely sense but not truly interfere with, he would have died ten thousand times by now.

However, based on the experiences from past lives, Lü Yang quickly concluded a way to avoid the World-Honored One’s gaze.

Because the previous life wasn’t his first time self-destructing and activating the Book of a Hundred Lifetimes in front of a Buddhist cultivator.

In the life before last, when he sabotaged Arhat Fulong by blowing up the ley lines, he had also used the Book of a Hundred Lifetimes!

So why didn’t the World-Honored One appear back then?

“...Because of the Heavenly Punishment!”

Lü Yang thought it over and believed that was the only possibility.

Under the Heavenly Punishment, all the merit and destiny on Arhat Fulong had been instantly erased.

Thus, the World-Honored One hadn’t descended or noticed.

This revealed that the strange possession technique was likely realized through merit and destiny.

This was the flaw in the World-Honored One’s control over Buddhist cultivators.

Where there’s a flaw, there’s a solution.

“If I can fully uncover the secret behind this and develop a method to block the World-Honored One’s influence on my consciousness, then maybe, one day, I could even take a stroll in the Pure Land...”

Unfortunately, that was still just a hopeful fantasy — far from achievable at present.

With thoughts retracted, Lü Yang looked at Wu Cang again.

At this moment, Wu Cang already showed an expression of impatience.

Though he vaguely sensed something was wrong, his first instinct wasn't to flee.

It was to end things quickly.

“If you refuse to be reasonable, fellow Daoist, don't blame me for being rude!”

As his words fell, a towering and intertwining tree suddenly burst forth into the sky — Wu Cang's Dao Foundation had manifested.

From the tree's canopy, a vermilion fruit rapidly grew.

Seeing this, Wu Cang's face showed a confident smile.

This “Wood-born Fire” was the most powerful mystery among his innate divine powers.

Combined with his talent 【Flee Not Southward】 , it could burn through any Dharma body with unmatched effectiveness.

But the next second, his eyes widened.

Faced with his “Wood-born Fire,” Lü Yang remained calm.

Behind him rose a dark aura, which swept directly toward Wu Cang's Dao Foundation.

Swoosh swoosh —!

In the blink of an eye, the blazing fire Wu Cang had just lit was extinguished like a candle in a storm.

All divine techniques were instantly cut off!

【Mountain of Embrace and Guard】 !

Having fought Wu Cang before, Lü Yang gave no room for him to unleash his techniques.

He directly hurled his newly refined innate divine power.

The result was drastic.

Within the Foundation Establishment realm, Wu Cang's 【Coiling Dragon Divine Tree Dao Foundation】 shook violently.

Above his head appeared the shadow of a towering mountain — illusory and intangible, yet exuding a crushing force that was real and suppressive.

It forcibly extinguished his Wood-born Fire!

“...Impossible!”

Wu Cang cried out in shock.

He felt a crushing weight descend, like Mount Tai pressing down on him.

To break through it, he would either need profound divine arts or immense Dharma power.

But he had neither.

In a flash of desperation, Wu Cang finally snapped awake.

Just as he was about to turn and flee, a divine radiance enveloped the surroundings.

【Fix Intimacy and Distance】 !

This marvelous technique could teleport himself or his enemies.

If Wu Cang’s Wood-born Fire hadn’t been suppressed, he could have used its divine flames to break the technique’s hold.

But now, with the flames crushed, most of his abilities were crippled.

He couldn’t resist Lü Yang’s teleportation at all!

At the same time, Lü Yang held a gourd in his hand.

【Three-Nine Soul-Dissolving Gourd】 !

Lü Yang uncorked the gourd and channeled his mana.

With a gentle shake, a cloud of hazy mist spilled forth.

Soul-dissolving, spirit-scattering, mind-seizing smoke!

This mist was powerful but notoriously hard to land on a target — usually impractical in combat.

But in Lü Yang’s hands, it worked wonders.

The next second, divine light flashed.

Wu Cang, suspended in midair, couldn't dodge.

He could only watch as he vanished from his spot and reappeared inside the hazy mist.

"You...! If you have guts, fight me head-on!"

Wu Cang's voice rang out from the smoke, full of hatred.

Even at this stage, Lü Yang refused to fight him directly.

He started with overpowering control — not giving any chance for a comeback.

But soon, Wu Cang's voice faded.

The soul-dissolving mist began to take effect, making his consciousness increasingly groggy.

Still, he knew — if he truly passed out, he might never wake again.

This clarity made him act decisively.

A red glint flashed in his eyes, and three bright auras appeared in his hand — three mid-grade spiritual treasures.

"...Explode!"

Though a rogue cultivator, Wu Cang lacked neither cunning nor ruthlessness.

To survive in the Saint Sect, one needed at least that much.

He was ruthless enough!

With a bang, all three spiritual treasures exploded in his hands.

The resulting shockwave shattered the mist and carved him a path to escape.

Boom boom boom!

Riding the burst of spiritual energy, Wu Cang's figure shot like lightning, trailing a light as he fled toward Mending Heaven Peak.

Freedom awaited beyond the mountain.

The explosion also tore through the formation concealment on the peak.

With spiritual energy in turmoil, many True Persons in the Saint Sect turned their eyes this way.

These were Wu Cang's life insurance.

No matter how vicious Lü Yang was, he surely wouldn't dare kill someone in front of so many onlookers... right?

Little did he know, Lü Yang had watched his every move.

The "Ultimate Heavens Instrument" between his brows had long predicted Wu Cang's reaction.

"Holding One, Guarding the Center, Differentiates Self from Other."

Suddenly, a Daoist chant rang beside Wu Cang's ear, so eerie it made his scalp tingle.

The surging spiritual tide abruptly froze!

In the blink of an eye, where was his promised freedom?

Where had the clear sky and wide world gone?

Just a second ago, he had seen daylight outside the peak.

Now, what loomed before him was a pitch-black mountain wall.

And his escape light was already in motion — he couldn't stop.

"Bang!"

With a deafening crash, Wu Cang smashed headlong into the materialized 【Mountain of Embrace and Guard】 in full view of everyone.

He was instantly pulverized!

From the shattering Dharma body, a soul floated out.

"You beast..."

Wu Cang's soul trembled with rage, just about to speak.

Lü Yang grabbed him.

"Senior Wu Cang, you only lost a round of spell dueling — why take it so hard?"

“Allow this junior to preserve your soul.”

Before his voice faded, Lü Yang stuffed the soul harshly into the Ten Thousand Spirits Banner.

After everything was done, Lü Yang looked around at the shocked, horrified crowd staring at him.

He offered a friendly smile:

“Everyone, please don’t misunderstand.”

“As you all saw, Senior Wu Cang couldn’t get over it and chose to end his life — crashing into my divine technique of his own will.”

Share to your friends

Tip: You can use left, right keyboard keys to browse between chapters.

[1,425 words]

In the Sky-reaching Sea of Clouds, inside the Sacred Fire Cliff.

In a hall that was extremely well-hidden, its existence concealed by layers of formations shielding the heavenly secrets and karmic threads, a figure was seen lighting a candle, sitting upright at the desk.

The man’s face looked as if it had been carved by knife and axe, at first glance, his entire being seemed righteous.

More importantly, his divine abilities had reached perfection, now fully manifesting and wreaking havoc within the hall.

If unleashed outside, in the overseas lands, even if he destroyed an entire continent there, it would have been nothing remarkable.

A Foundation Establishment Realm cultivator at the peak, a True Master—Hong Ju!

At this moment, Hong Ju sat solemnly.

On the desk before him lay a book and a brush, his eyes slightly closed as if deep in thought.

Rustle—!

The wind blew, flipping the pages.

The book was not thick, appearing to have only a few thin pages.

On the cover, a line of talismanic text was drawn in tadpole-like script.

【Same Fate, Easy Fortune Talisman Book】

A treasure of the fruit status under the Covered Lamp Flame, the only one of its kind in the world.

Since its appearance, it had always been sealed here and had never left.

To leave writing on this talisman book, one must use merit as the brush and fortune as the ink.

The consumption was enormous.

Without being a peak Foundation Establishment True Master, one could not even afford to use it.

Even if one could, each use required extreme caution, for fear of triggering backlash and suffering loss instead of gain.

Thus, Hong Ju had not used this secret treasure for a long time.

Just now, he had written a line on the page: 【Wu Cang kills Lü Yang】 .

Once the words were formed, a killing intent from Heaven and Earth would naturally arise.

“Crack!”

The next moment, Hong Ju’s movement suddenly froze.

He saw the writing he had just made on the 【Same Fate, Easy Fortune Talisman Book】 start to glow blood red.

This was not good!

Before Hong Ju could react, a bolt of lightning suddenly burst out within the hall.

It struck his Dharma body directly, leaving no room to dodge.

Because this was no ordinary lightning.

This was heavenly punishment!

The lightning lasted for a full fifteen minutes before it dissipated, revealing Hong Ju's slightly scorched figure.

Although he instantly activated his divine powers to restore his appearance.

However, it was only on the surface.

In reality, a full tenth of his merit and fortune had been stripped away by the heavenly punishment.

Though this would not affect his combat strength, for a peak True Master like him, the loss of merit and fortune was far more serious!

"How could this be?"

Hong Ju's face darkened as he immediately began divination.

After a long while, he finally opened his mouth slightly: ".Mid-stage? Yuan Tu broke through to mid-Foundation Establishment Realm?"

Impossible!

"It's unreasonable that I couldn't foresee this at all in advance. Could it be the legacy of the Witch Ghost Path? Was the Witch Ghost Path back then really this rich?"

Countless karmic threads flashed through Hong Ju's eyes.

His fingers almost sparked from friction, yet he gained nothing and could only speculate in his heart.

"The Witch Ghost Path holds the Skull Mountain Earth Vein, using its earth vein qi to cultivate Wu Earth..."

"Though it's not entirely impossible, it feels too coincidental. Could it be that the fruit status is favoring him?"

Such situations were not unheard of.

For example, True Person Chong Guang—why was someone of the later Jin generation able to compete with Hong Yun, the reincarnated True Lord, for the fruit status, even suppressing him?

Because the fruit status favored him!

And Lü Yang, being the only True Master whose Dao Foundation pointed directly at 【City Head Earth】 , receiving the favor of the fruit status and being blessed by fortune, was not surprising.

In fact, this was the only reasonable explanation.

However, Lü Yang's breakthrough this time and his killing of Wu Cang had brought Hong Ju great trouble.

The fate he had previously annotated was completely broken.

Fate was not omnipotent, and there was always a sliver of chance in everything.

After all, cultivation itself was about defying the heavens.

Just like an endangered species, it could either go extinct or undergo a new evolution.

With the breaking of the annotated fate, he even suffered backlash.

After all, the killing intent he had catalyzed against Lü Yang was based on Lü Yang being only at the early Foundation Establishment Realm at the time.

But Lü Yang broke through to mid-stage, causing unexpected variables, leading to the fate collapsing.

To put it vividly, this was like paying Heaven and Earth to launch a project, but after Heaven and Earth funded it, they discovered the project's information was flawed, the returns were falsified, and all the money was lost.

How could this not trigger heavenly punishment?

However, there was still room to salvage the situation.

Hong Ju thought for a moment and wiped away the writing on the 【Same Fate, Easy Fortune Talisman Book】 .

His merit and fortune flowed away like a breached dam.

In an instant, he wrote a new line:

【Lü Yang dies overseas】

Boom!

As the words were formed, Hong Ju's face grew noticeably more withered.

However, if he wanted to eliminate Lü Yang quietly, this was the only method left.

“Seal the cave dwelling, from today I will enter seclusion.”

Hong Ju shook his head and put away the 【Same Fate, Easy Fortune Talisman Book】.

He spoke softly to the formation spirit outside the hall, knowing that with his fortune damaged, he could not leave again.

Only by meditating in seclusion, dissipating the calamity qi, and waiting for his mind to clear could he emerge once more.

Otherwise, with his current cultivation, he would surely fall into calamity.

If he was lucky, he could reincarnate and gain another life.

If he was unlucky, he might not even get the chance to reincarnate.

“Yuan Tu...”

In the dim hall, Hong Ju slowly savored this name.

His voice echoed faintly within the hall but gradually faded until silence returned completely.

Sky-reaching Sea of Clouds, Mending Heaven Peak.

At this moment, everything was still silent.

【Embracing Mountain】 stood tall, and a long streak of blood hung down the mountain wall like a waterfall.

That was Wu Cang’s blood.

At that time, the scene had been quite chaotic.

A group of True Masters from the Primordial Saint Sect had gathered outside Mending Heaven Peak, planning to ambush Wu Cang after he obtained the True Lord’s letter.

Who would have thought, in the blink of an eye, it was Wu Cang who ended up fleeing in panic.

While everyone was still reeling from the shock of Lü Yang’s breakthrough to mid-Foundation Establishment Realm, they saw Wu Cang suddenly charge headlong toward the 【Embracing Mountain】.

At first glance, it really looked like he was seeking death.

However, everyone here was a True Master of the Primordial Saint Sect, all adept at underhanded tactics, so most still harbored doubts, their eyes showing strange expressions as they looked at Lü Yang.

“What? You all don’t believe me?”

Seeing this, Lü Yang remained expressionless and took out the All-Spirit Banner.

“If I truly intended to kill, why would I use this 【Soul-Guarding Banner】 to preserve Senior Wu Cang’s soul?”

“This is a Soul-Guarding Banner? Something doesn’t seem right?”

“Why is it still emitting black qi?”

Lü Yang did not bother to explain.

He simply shook out the now banner spirit-bound Wu Cang, making him fabricate a story about having momentarily lost his will.

Both evidence and testimony were present.

Under such circumstances, even the True Masters who still held suspicions could say nothing more.

Besides, this was the Primordial Saint Sect—what the truth really was didn’t matter.

What mattered was that Lü Yang was still alive, while Wu Cang was dead.

At this moment, a voice suddenly rang out:

“Yuan Tu, come see me at Sacred Fire Cliff.”

It was True Person Chong Guang.

His tone was urgent and carried an uncontrollable excitement, which was extremely improper for a peak True Master.

Lü Yang had long expected this.

‘I’ve broken through to mid-Foundation Establishment Realm, standing alongside True Person Yinshan. It seems I’ve barely met his expectations. I wonder what he wants from me?’

However, Lü Yang quickly composed himself.

After all, if True Person Chong Guang needed him, it would only work to his advantage.

Especially at this critical moment, Chong Guang would definitely not ignore his requests.

So Lü Yang had already made up his mind.

'I'm going to report to Hong Yun!'

'Overseas is so dangerous. Instead of facing that Dao Sinner in the Biyang Cultivation World alone, I might as well tell True Person Chong Guang and let him handle it!'

'First-grade Grand Completion True Qi—there's no way Chong Guang won't be tempted!'

As for the benefits, as long as True Person Chong Guang still needed him and he held sufficient value, Lü Yang believed Chong Guang would not mind sharing a piece with him.

Share to your friends

Tip: You can use left, right keyboard keys to browse between chapters.

Chapter 182: I Will Sweep the Path for You

[1,395 words]

"Shishu! There are bad people inside the Saint Sect!"

At Sacred Fire Cliff, Lü Yang had just stepped through the door when he shouted loudly, his voice filled with grievance to the extreme, causing True Person Chong Guang to freeze in place for a moment before he came back to his senses.

"Stop acting like that with me!"

True Person Chong Guang scolded with a smile, "The one who died was Wu Cang, not you, and yet you're the one acting all wronged. Do you want me to remind you of the heavy crime of harming your fellow disciples?"

Seeing this, Lü Yang sighed inwardly.

Ever since he broke through to the mid-stage of Foundation Establishment, True Person Chong Guang's attitude had completely changed.

If in his previous lifetime the man had carried himself with the overbearing airs of a senior, now he was much more affectionate, looking at Lü Yang as if he were a precious treasure.

But this was just as well.

The more True Person Chong Guang acted this way, the more it showed that Lü Yang was important to him, making it easier to ask for more without reservation.

With that thought, Lü Yang immediately burst into tears.

"Shishu, you don't know how much I've suffered during this time! After the self-detonation of the earth vein, I've been entangled by tribulation energy. I truly was schemed against without even realizing it."

"Schemed against?"

Hearing this, True Person Chong Guang immediately narrowed his eyes and started calculating with his fingers, only for his brows to furrow even deeper.

"The web of karma shows no abnormalities."

Everything appeared perfectly clear.

Wu Cang had been blinded by greed, came to extort the True Person's handwritten letter, and was killed by Lü Yang in return.

There was no concealment, completely clear and obvious, without a trace of irregularity.

However...

No irregularity was the greatest irregularity!

Though the killing intent of heaven and earth left no trace, True Person Chong Guang didn't need traces.

He only needed to know who benefited the most from Lü Yang's death.

True Person Chong Guang fell silent for a moment, then summoned the spirit of the formation.

"Have True Person Hong Ju come to see me. I have something important to discuss with him."

The spirit of the formation shook its head.

“Reporting to True Person, True Person Hong Ju has already gone into seclusion.”

Hearing this, True Person Chong Guang immediately narrowed his eyes and then burst into loud laughter.

“As expected, there’s something fishy here! It must be that old monster scheming against you in the shadows!”

On the other side, Lü Yang firmly remembered the name “Hong Ju.”

So it was this bastard who schemed me to death in my last life?

Hong Ju, Hong Yun... just one character apart, clearly birds of a feather, all worthless scum!

Just you wait, I’ve remembered this grudge!

Thinking of this, Lü Yang quickly leaned in and continued.

“Shishu, this is silencing me!”

“I just received news earlier that Daoist Hong Yun left a hidden move overseas, and I was about to report it to you when Wu Cang showed up.”

“If I hadn’t been lucky enough to break through to the mid-stage, I’m afraid I would have fallen to Wu Cang’s hands.”

“This isn’t just silencing me; it’s clearly aiming for your life, Shishu!”

To True Person Chong Guang, Daoist Hong Yun was a mortal enemy, so all intelligence about him was of utmost importance.

Hearing this, True Person Chong Guang immediately turned serious.

“Speak in detail.”

“This matter involves a region overseas...”

Seeing this, Lü Yang held nothing back and directly spoke of the existence of the Biyang Cultivation World and the 『Imperial Seal Doushuai True Edict』 .

At first, True Person Chong Guang didn’t seem to care, but when he heard the name 『Imperial Seal Doushuai True Edict』 , his previously calm expression suddenly changed.

His eyes narrowed slightly, revealing a trace of killing intent.

“So that’s what happened... I’ve been wondering why I couldn’t find that outer elixir from back then.”

“So he hid it overseas?”

For a time, True Person Chong Guang sat cross-legged on the meditation cushion, his fingers continuously calculating as he fell deep into thought.

Lü Yang stood silently by the side, saying nothing and waiting patiently.

After a long while, True Person Chong Guang finally raised his head and looked at Lü Yang with meaningful eyes.

“How did you come by this information?”

Lü Yang had already prepared an answer and replied calmly.

“To tell you the truth, I once received the legacy of the Innate True Person. Everything came from the records left behind before his death.”

“Innate True Person?”

True Person Chong Guang was momentarily stunned, then calculated again for a moment before shaking his head.

“That person lived five thousand years ago and was not on good terms with our Saint Sect.”

This was the first time Lü Yang had heard anything about the Innate True Person, and he asked curiously.

“Disciple only knows that he was a rogue cultivator. Could there be more to him?”

“No, he was indeed a rogue cultivator, but he didn’t need any other backing.”

True Person Chong Guang shook his head, his eyes showing a trace of admiration.

“That man was the embodiment of the tribulation’s fortune born during the last great calamity a thousand years ago. His talent was extraordinary. Though a rogue cultivator, he was in no way inferior to the true disciples of great sects.”

“He had hope of ascending in that great calamity.”

“Unfortunately, his character was too upright, and being born of tribulation fortune, he was disliked by all the True Persons. They deliberately tricked him into building his foundation with a fourth-grade cultivation method.”

“Because of this, his path of ascension was cut off.”

“After that, he faded into obscurity, and no one knew where he went. Near the end of the great calamity, the True Persons divined the heavenly secrets and learned that he had left behind a legacy.”

“However, no one knows what means he used, for even the True Persons could not divine the details. In the end, they simply bound that legacy’s karma to the Saint Sect. This way, no matter what he left behind, it would eventually fall into the hands of the Saint Sect’s disciples, making the best use of it.”

After speaking, True Person Chong Guang specially glanced at Lü Yang.

“You, as the grand-disciple of True Person Ting You of the Witch Ghost Path, have even managed to receive the Innate True Person’s legacy. Your fortune has already surpassed that of many True Persons.”

“Shishu flatters me.”

Lü Yang bowed deeply and took the initiative to change the subject.

“Shishu, if my guess is correct, the Biyang Cultivation World is likely the gold-seeking ground of the Innate True Person.”

“That man failed in his pursuit of gold and left endless troubles behind.”

“You mean Dao Sin, don’t you?”

True Person Chong Guang nodded.

“No matter. A single Dao Sin, plus the 『Imperial Seal Doushuai True Edict』 , is already enough for the Saint Sect to stir up some trouble.”

Lü Yang was stunned to hear this.

To stir up some trouble?

Seeing Lü Yang’s expression, True Person Chong Guang showed a strange look.

“What, you still want me to accompany you to the overseas region?”

“You’ve already said yourself that there might be a Dao Sin transformed from a failed gold-seeking cultivator over there.”

“Why should I take the risk to go?”

As soon as he finished speaking, True Person Chong Guang stepped out of the hall and summoned the formation spirit again.

“Report this matter to True Person Qingcheng Feixue.”

The formation spirit acknowledged and left.

Not long after, Lü Yang suddenly raised his head, feeling as if a gaze from the heavens had fallen upon him, slicing through his entire being.

‘...A True Person!?’

The gaze lingered for a while before it finally dissipated.

Soon after, the formation spirit reappeared atop Sacred Fire Cliff, holding a talisman in both hands as it approached.

Though the talisman seemed thin and light, it carried the weight of a thousand catties.

The weight, of course, was not the paper, but the writing upon it.

True Person Chong Guang’s expression turned solemn as he respectfully received the talisman with both hands.

After glancing at it, he passed it to Lü Yang.

“You’re in luck.”

Lü Yang took the talisman and looked carefully.

【You bear the great karma of the Pure Land and are entangled with the killing intent of heaven and earth. All forces want you dead overseas. Staying in the Sea of Clouds may keep you safe, but it would be like being a corpse within a tomb. Moreover, if karma remains unresolved, it will only grow heavier with time.】

【Take my handwritten order and make a trip overseas.】

【I will sweep the path for you.】

Share to your friends

Tip: You can use left, right keyboard keys to browse between chapters.

- Chapter 183: I'm Going to Do Something Big!

[1,593 words]

Lü Yang almost swaggered out of the Sacred Fire Cliff, swinging his arms.

The words of True Person Qingcheng Feixue were like a dose of a strong stimulant, instantly giving him confidence.

This was the advantage of coming from a prestigious sect.

Who didn't have a backer these days!

What Dao Sin of the Innate True Person?

What schemes of True Person Jingtū?

Try bullying me again if you dare!

Let me show you how I'll blow your eyes wide open!

However, Lü Yang also understood that True Person Qingcheng Feixue wasn't helping him for nothing.

"After all, Chong Guang still needs to use me, but I carry too many karmic entanglements on me. If they aren't dealt with, I fear they might implicate Chong Guang instead."

Besides that, part of the reason was likely because he had shone brightly in the Dao Seizing Battle, bringing considerable honor and benefits to True Person Qingcheng Feixue.

That was why the True Person extended a hand of goodwill.

Thinking of this, Lü Yang immediately tucked the True Person's personally inscribed talisman tightly into his pocket.

"Opportunities like this are rare. I can't waste it."

【Karma Cleansing】

Since True Person Qingcheng Feixue had said so, Lü Yang certainly wouldn't foolishly rush straight to Biyang Cultivation World to deal with the Dao Sin and Guang Ming, then come back.

After all, the karmic entanglements on him were numerous!

Now that the True Person had spoken and made it clear that they could help him cleanse it all, if he only dealt with two of them, wouldn't that be a complete loss for him?

"At this point, Jingtū is dead set on converting me. The Dao Court probably already sees me as a rebel. As for the Sword Pavilion, I hear Ancestor Ting You is still alive. Who knows how that True Person who annihilated the Witch Ghost Path feels about me?"

Not to mention the original owner of the 【Abi Sword】 , the karma debt carried by that Great True Person of the Saint Sect..."

Looking at it this way, Sword Pavilion, Jingtū, Dao Court, Saint Sect—he actually had karmic ties with all of them!

Just thinking about it made Lü Yang's head hurt.

According to the True Person, this time someone had deliberately set up a world-shaking killing scheme aimed at making him die overseas, on a scale likely bigger than in his previous life.

After all, in his previous life, he was only in the early Foundation Establishment Realm.

But this time, he had already broken through to the mid Foundation Establishment Realm.

If they still wanted to kill him, it wouldn't be so easy anymore.

They would definitely have to draw in even more karma.

From this perspective, True Person Qingcheng Feixue actually intended to use him as bait.

"But that suits me just fine."

Lü Yang didn't mind at all.

After all, as the True Person's bait, the more trouble he stirred up, the cleaner the karmic cleansing would be afterward!

It was beneficial to him too.

With this thought, Lü Yang immediately rode his escape light and left the Saint Sect.

Of course, before leaving, he casually slaughtered Wu Cang completely.

The Ten Thousand Spirit Banner didn't lack one more Foundation Establishment sacrifice, but the 【Abi Sword】 desperately needed him.

A single Wu Cang, a mid Foundation Establishment sacrifice, was enough to match twelve 合道 of his previous life.

It immediately restored the 【Abi Sword】's 【Perilous Tread】 ability.

This allowed Lü Yang to see the 【Danger】 character above his head and judge whether there was any danger nearby.

At this moment, the 【Danger】 character was still in a pale red state.

"This color indicates that the world-killing scheme is still brewing, and the danger targeting me has probably started gathering since I left the Saint Sect."

But it didn't matter.

Lü Yang was fearless about this.

He even stopped using the 【Embracing Mountain】 to suppress his fortune and karma, instead opening it up, allowing others to calculate his whereabouts.

This time, he was going to do something big!

Jiangxi, Deep Joy Pure Land.

In the Water Moon Zen Forest, amidst countless temples, on a lotus platform, a pure-looking white-robed woman was explaining scriptures to a group of monks and Arhats.

"Thus have I heard, the World-Honored One and the countless Bodhisattvas..."

Her voice sounded like heavenly thunder, striking directly at the hearts of all the Buddhist cultivators, making them personally experience the life of the World-Honored One and immerse themselves in his story.

Such sermons were not rare in the Pure Land.

Through interpreting the 『Great Vehicle Fundamental Sutra of True Enlightenment』, every Buddhist cultivator would gain a personal insight into the World-Honored One's Dao.

The deeper the insight, the closer it aligned with the World-Honored One, and the higher their cultivation would become.

However, at that moment, the sermon suddenly came to an abrupt stop.

In an instant, the monks and Arhats who had been deeply immersed in the wondrous realm of Buddhist sounds all raised their heads and looked at the female Bodhisattva who had suddenly furrowed her brows on the lotus platform.

After a long while, the female Bodhisattva finally smiled gracefully.

"All causes bear bitter fruits, and overseas storms are stirring. It seems that the one who cultivated the 【Ten Thousand Carriage Dragon-Riding Dao Foundation】 , Yuan Tu, has gone to sea. Everything is unfolding just as I foresaw."

She had already sent Guang Ming overseas early on.

With the karmic seeds she had planted in Guang Ming, there was no need to deliberately stir karma.

As long as things flowed naturally, they would inevitably meet Lü Yang.

"Excellent!"

Jiangnan, Jade Pivot Sword Pavilion.

At the Extreme Heaven Cliff, a handsome young man with red lips and white teeth was sitting at the cliff top, letting the fierce winds whip at his fluttering robes, with a long sword resting on his knees.

Behind him stood several real persons of the Sword Pavilion.

"The True Person has been in seclusion for quite some time. One lifetime of a Golden Core lasts a thousand years. Although the True Person has tried repeatedly to delay it, the day of their limit has finally arrived."

"What do you think? Is there any risk?"

"The True Person is fully prepared. With the precedent of the Witch Ghost Path, no one dares to cultivate 【Wall Soil】 anymore. Even if someone does, they wouldn't dare to complete their Foundation Establishment."

"If there's any threat left, it would only be that Yuan Tu from the Demon Sect."

"The Witch Ghost Path's legacy has fallen into his hands. It's said that he established a Dao lineage in the Sea of Clouds. Although Ting You is no longer what he once was, he still survived."

At these words, one real person immediately frowned.

"Ting You is still alive?"

"That won't do!"

"The True Person is about to reincarnate. How can we leave Ting You as a hidden threat? Even if he's no longer what he used to be, as long as he's alive, there's always a chance for change!"

The speaker had sharp sword-like eyebrows that slanted toward his temples.

Although dressed in a loose Daoist robe, he couldn't hide the sharp, soaring sword aura on his body.

Even ordinary early Foundation Establishment real persons felt their eyes sting just by looking at his silhouette.

Those below Foundation Establishment couldn't even bear to look at him directly.

"Since that's the case, what do you intend to do, Real Person Ye?"

The other Sword Pavilion real persons immediately turned serious upon hearing this.

This was because Real Person Ye was the direct descendant of the True Person's lineage, and his cultivation was equally astonishing.

Ye Xingfeng, Dao title 【Heaven's Punishment】 , was once the top true disciple of the Sword Pavilion.

He cultivated the 『Taiyi Heavenly Gang Sword Fiend』 , building his Dao Foundation with grade-three True Qi.

By now, he had long refined an innate divine ability and achieved mid Foundation Establishment.

Moreover, he had even comprehended Sword Intent.

For a Foundation Establishment real person, possessing Sword Intent was almost equivalent to having an extra divine ability!

If he could obtain a true treasure flying sword specialized in killing, this Heaven's Punishment Real Person could even challenge late Foundation Establishment great real persons.

Although he would undoubtedly lose, he could at least hold his own to some extent.

Not to mention that against mid Foundation Establishment cultivators, he had yet to taste defeat.

With such divine abilities, Ye Xingfeng's character was easy to imagine.

He was a standard sword cultivator, one who would rather strike straight than seek crooked paths.

Thus, when facing a potential hidden threat, his answer was simple:

"I'll go cut down that Witch Ghost inheritor."

Ye Xingfeng calculated with his fingers and calmly said, "That person has gone overseas and is no longer in the Saint Sect. I'll go cut him down to prevent endless troubles!"

"This..."

Hearing this, one Sword Pavilion real person hesitated and said, "Why not wait for the True Person to awaken and consult them first? After all, that's a real person of the Demon Sect, and it wouldn't be wise to go rashly."

Upon hearing this, Ye Xingfeng also furrowed his brows and pondered for a moment.

Should he wait or not?

If it were before, he might have chosen to wait for the True Person to emerge from seclusion.

But now, a vague sense of unease had risen in his heart.

After careful consideration, he firmly shook his head.

"Opportunity knocks but once."

"After this seclusion, the True Person will reincarnate. If that person returns to the Demon Sect by then, it will be too late. It's better to strike swiftly and decisively."

"I'll make a trip overseas."

Seeing that Ye Xingfeng had made up his mind, the others no longer tried to dissuade him.

After all, with Ye Xingfeng's status and strength, there shouldn't be any real danger overseas.

As for that Witch Ghost inheritor, who had just broken through to Foundation Establishment a hundred years ago, he was not worth worrying about.

A mid Foundation Establishment, sword intent-comprehending, peerless sword cultivator—

Could he really die?

Share to your friends

Tip: You can use left, right keyboard keys to browse between chapters.

[1,427 words]

Overseas, above a boundless sea.

Lü Yang rode on his escape light, only to see a bright pillar of fortune burning fiercely above his head, then transforming into an intangible intuition guiding his path.

These were all the merit and fortune of the Divine Martial Sect.

In his previous life, he used this merit and fortune to find the Biyang Cultivation World, but in this life, he had broken through, so this merit and fortune could be used elsewhere.

The next moment, a red light floated out from Lü Yang's sleeve, finally transforming into a figure—a petite girl wearing a red cotton jacket and a bun hairstyle landed on Lü Yang's knee, affectionately snuggling into his arms: "Master is going to find the old master?"

Chih Pen Buddhist Studies Institute

"That's right."

Lü Yang patted the little girl's head and smiled: "You carry heavy karma, now drawn by the killing intent of heaven and earth, thus revealing yourself prematurely."

This was Lü Yang's new discovery.

When he accepted the 【Abhī Sword】 , Lü Yang also inherited a karma from the original owner of the 【Abhī Sword】 , a late Foundation Establishment great cultivator.

Having obtained the spiritual treasure, he must guide the reincarnation of the original owner back from the cycle of rebirth in the future. Unfortunately, this karma seemed very troublesome, to the extent that the previous sword masters of the 【Abhī Sword】 all died because of it; otherwise, this superior spiritual treasure wouldn't have been neglected in the Primordial Saint Sect.

As Lü Yang broke through to the mid-stage, this karma arrived.

"Originally, it shouldn't have come so quickly, but first, I broke through to mid- Foundation Establishment, and second, the killing intent of heaven and earth pushed it, causing the karma to emerge early."

Driven by karma, he had no choice but to go.

If he didn't go, regardless of whether the sword spirit of the 【Abhī Sword】 was willing or not, it would leave him under the influence of karma, and might even backfire on his fortune.

This was the insidiousness of the killing intent of heaven and earth.

It didn't directly create karma but utilized other karma, leaving no trace.

Although Lü Yang's strength had increased significantly in this life, the corresponding crises would become more terrifying. Without surprise, he would still die miserably overseas.

However, being without surprise was impossible.

"Come on, all of you, come on."

Looking at the increasingly bright red "Danger" above his head, Lü Yang grinned. The True Monarch's personal letter in his arms was the biggest surprise of this overseas trip!

No matter who came, it would be a death sentence!

Moments later, as most of the Divine Martial Sect's merit and fortune were consumed, the heavenly mechanism gradually became clear. Lü Yang immediately calculated with his fingers, understanding the ins and outs.

The next moment, Lü Yang raised his eyebrows: "They really aren't even pretending anymore."

The reincarnation location of the original owner of the 【Abhī Sword】 , that great cultivator, was not only in a barren overseas land but also involved with the Dao Court?

"...Hmm?"

At this moment, Lü Yang suddenly felt something, raised his head, and looked into the distance, only to see a magnificent sword light flying towards him.

Overseas, the Star Sea.

The spiritual energy environment here was much harsher than the chaotic sea where the Biyang Cultivation World was located. It was a desolate place, not suitable for cultivators.

Yet, in such a dangerous place, there stood a giant ship as large as a mountain. The treasure light from the bow rippled like the rising sun, calming the sea and stabilizing the spiritual energy. On the giant ship, countless figures could be seen moving about, all armored and armed.

"Commander, all preparations are complete."

As the messenger came to report, at the bow, a robust man wearing a silver three-beam crown and a green robe immediately showed an excited expression.

In the Jiangdong Dao Court, attire indicated official rank.

A three-beam crown and green robe indicated that this robust man held a fifth-rank official position, just one step away from the fourth-rank red robe officials in the court.

Indeed, that was the case.

This man's name was Ying Tongshou, currently serving as the General of Martial Virtue, commanding the Fubo Navy. With the support of his fifth-rank official position, his cultivation was no weaker than the early Foundation Establishment stage.

"Pass down the order."

Ying Tongshou's expression was solemn: "Seal off the Star Sea, don't let anyone in. Don't forget, we are here under His Majesty's secret order!"

"If the calculations of the Divination Platform are correct, the 【Blood Demon Island】 will fall into this Star Sea in three days. As long as we enter first and retrieve the soul of that Blood Demon True Person and bring it back to Jiangdong, then, under the entanglement of karma, the True Person Yuan Tu of the Demon Sect will have to come to Jiangdong."

"Commander, this task is not easy."

Beside Ying Tongshou, his deputy was still somewhat uneasy: "The commander is only a fifth-rank official. Entering the Blood Demon Island rashly might be dangerous."

"You don't need to worry about that."

Ying Tongshou smiled upon hearing this: "Precisely because I am only a fifth-rank official, at the early Foundation Establishment stage, unknown and unnoticed, no one will pay attention to me when I go to sea."

"And after going to sea, that's another matter."

As he spoke, Ying Tongshou took out a gold foil from his bosom. The deputy took a closer look and was immediately surprised. It was a promotion edict!

"Commander is getting a promotion?" The deputy looked delighted.

"That's right!" Ying Tongshou looked proud: "His Majesty has already sent a secret edict, promoting me to the fourth-rank General of Broad Might. By then, I will have mid-Foundation Establishment cultivation!"

This was the Dao Court system. As long as the official position was attained, the cultivation would follow. Even if you were just a first-level Qi Refining soldier a moment ago, with a second-rank official position, you could instantly become a great cultivator at the peak of Foundation Establishment. Of course, the result of doing so was likely to be body explosion and death.

Because official positions also required merit and fortune to support.

In short, without that fate, even if you were given the official position, you couldn't handle it. Not only would you not rise smoothly, but you would also suffer backlash.

This was also the subtlety of the Dao Court system.

Any Dao Court official could only accumulate merit and fortune through protecting the realm and the people. Therefore, whether one could be promoted or not, just ask the Divination Platform to take a look.

More merit meant frequent political achievements.

Less merit meant you were an unkind official.

This was why the Dao Court was included in the righteous path. To put it bluntly, among the four directions—east, south, west, and north—the areas under the Dao Court's rule were the most stable.

However, at this moment—

"Boom!"

A loud noise like thunder rolled through the sky, accompanied by soaring spiritual energy exploding, transforming into a surging tide of spiritual energy sweeping in all directions, reflecting five-colored lights under the sky.

"What's going on?"

Ying Tongshou's expression immediately became solemn. Then he saw the messenger who had just left scrambling back, saying: "Commander, someone is fighting!"

"...Fighting?"

Ying Tongshou was stunned upon hearing this. Before he could continue to ask, another explosion sounded, seemingly closer than the previous one. The spiritual tide even stirred up layers of waves, crashing onto the Fubo giant ship where the Dao Court navy was stationed, causing the ship's treasure light to shake.

Seeing this, Ying Tongshou's expression became even more serious:

"Early Foundation Establishment... no, mid-stage!"

"To have such power, it's probably not an ordinary overseas native, but someone from the mainland, comparable to a celestial official."

The more he sensed, the more shocked Ying Tongshou became:

"Who exactly is this divine being?"

Before he finished speaking, the third explosion came.

This time, Ying Tongshou finally saw the two sides fighting above the sea surface—a red and a white light colliding, producing the explosion.

"Descendant of the Witch Ghosts, prepare to die!"

A clear voice echoed, and the blazing white sword light in the sky slashed down again, while the red escape light turned and disappeared into thin air.

Boom!

The sword light plunged into the sea surface, instantly creating a bottomless vortex, stirring the surrounding sea currents. Countless fish and shrimp died as a result.

Not far away, Lü Yang appeared, looking calm and composed.

In his hand, the figure of Master Ting You also quietly appeared on the All Spirits Banner, looking guilty: "Jade Pivot Sword Cultivator... I implicated you."

"A small matter, Master, don't blame yourself."

Now, what fear did Lü Yang have? He wished for more to come, just to set a trap, wait for the karma to gather, and then kill them all!

Share to your friends

Tip: You can use left, right keyboard keys to browse between chapters.

Chapter 185: First Duel with the Sword Pavilion

[1,469 words]

Above the Sea of Constellations, sword qi soared into the sky, sweeping through the jade-like heavens, clearing the clouds for thousands of miles.

The sea and sky merged into one, forming a naturally breathtaking scene.

"Such a pity, someone has ruined the view."

Lü Yang sighed softly, then looked ahead at the sword-browed youth glaring at him with hostility. "Fellow Daoist, you have chased me all this way. May I ask your name?"

"Jade Pivot Sword Pavilion, 【Tian Xing】 !"

Ye Xingfeng made no attempt to hide his identity.

In fact, the sword cultivators of the Jade Pivot Sword Pavilion had always disdained concealing their origins, taking great pride in their lineage.

After all, even the Primordial Saint Sect had to treat the Sword Pavilion as an equal rival.

Throughout the history of battles between righteous and demonic factions, the Dao Court and the Pure Land always played the idle bystanders.

Only the Sword Pavilion had ever charged ahead without hesitation, clashing head-on with the Saint Sect in life-and-death struggles.

The blood feud between the two sides was self-evident.

Thus, seeing this, Lü Yang could only sigh again. "I have only been in the Foundation Establishment Realm for less than a hundred years, and I have never killed anyone from the Sword Pavilion. I have no grudge with you, do I?"

Ye Xingfeng shook his head at these words. "There is no grudge, but there is karmic consequence. You inherited the legacy of the Witch Ghost Path and joined the Jiangbei Demon Sect to commit evil. That is the evil cause. Today I come to kill you, and that is the evil consequence. This is your self-inflicted fate, the result of your lack of virtue. You must suffer this tribulation."

"...As expected of the Sword Pavilion."

Lü Yang recalled the Yun Miaozen he had once met and found it unsurprising.

After all, if she had already been so deranged in the Qi Refining stage, it was entirely reasonable for the real experts to be even more extreme.

"Shameless to the extreme...!"

Behind Lü Yang, Master Ting You trembled with rage as he remembered the words spoken a thousand years ago by a Golden Core True Lord who had wiped out the Witch Ghost Path with a single sword.

【You were born in the Demonic Path, yet you covet the wall's soil. This is the evil cause. Today, I kill you to rid the world of demons and uphold the Dao. This is the righteous consequence. Considering how hard cultivation is, by granting you this righteous consequence, I form a karmic bond with you and will guide your reincarnation to join the Sword Pavilion and cultivate.】

The meaning of these words was very simple:

Although I slaughtered your entire clan, I did it for your own good.

Though your family is dead, you have gained a fortuitous opportunity.

When you reincarnate, you can join my Sword Pavilion.

Is that even human speech?

The thought of reincarnating in the future, powerless to unravel the mystery of the womb, foolishly joining the Sword Pavilion and treating the sect's murderer as a friend...

Master Ting You felt an overwhelming hatred that nearly drove him mad!

If not for this, why else would he only reincarnate within secret realms, struggling to survive?

He would rather his soul scatter into nothingness than become a disciple of the Sword Pavilion!

Killing intent surged in Master Ting You's heart.

However, in the end, he calmed down, turned to Lü Yang, and said, "This man cultivates the 【Taiyi Heavenly Gang Sword Fiend】 and has established the 【Taiyi True Gold Dao Foundation】. He must have long since refined an innate divine ability. His cultivation is a level higher than yours."

"Moreover, sword cultivators excel at combat arts. It is best to avoid clashing head-on."

Master Ting You's tone was calm.

Lü Yang was now the only hope of the Witch Ghost Path.

Compared to Lü Yang, his personal hatred was insignificant.

However, in the very next moment—

"What a joke. I should avoid him?"

Lü Yang gripped the Abyss Sword tightly and sneered. "Today, the one who should be avoiding the clash... is him!"

Whoosh——!

Before the words had fully left his mouth, Lü Yang had already raised the Abyss Sword.

The crimson sword light slashed straight toward Ye Xingfeng.

This strike had been building power for a long time, and as it was unleashed, it seemed to split the seas and skies!

"Excellent!"

Seeing this, Ye Xingfeng was not shocked but delighted.

He immediately summoned a sword pill that swirled with spiritual energy.

With a spin, it split into over a hundred sharp sword qis.

These sword qis spread out like a peacock displaying its feathers, like mercury pouring down, directly covering the crimson sword light of the Abyss Sword.

Each trajectory was as elusive as a goat's horns, leaving no trace, yet achieving a pinnacle of skill.

They precisely struck the weak points in the Abyss Sword's light.

Crack!

In just a moment, Lü Yang's fully charged crimson sword light was shredded into fragments by the countless sword qis.

The sword qis then gathered once again, reforming into the shape of the sword pill.

This was Ye Xingfeng's life-bound flying sword.

Throughout the Jade Pivot Sword Pavilion, direct descendants like him, born of True Lord lineage, would start refining a life-bound flying sword from the Qi Refining stage using countless rare materials.

For this purpose, the Sword Pavilion had even created a secret technique.

It allowed them to merge their life-bound flying sword with their Dao Foundation during Foundation Establishment.

This not only increased the success rate of Foundation Establishment by ten percent, but the flying sword could also serve as a divine ability afterward.

The higher the quality of the life-bound flying sword, the greater its power.

Take Ye Xingfeng's 【Galaxy Sword Pill】 for example.

This sword pill was crafted from 【Heavenly River Star Sand】 , combined with five refined metals.

A True Lord had even infused it with the qi of 【Upper Chapter】 Geng Metal.

Even among high-grade spirit treasures, this was a supreme masterpiece!

It contained three profound abilities: 【Barrier Break】 , 【Mind Sever】 , and 【God Slay】 , all of which were killing abilities without exception.

【Barrier Break】 could pierce defenses and obstacles.

【Mind Sever】 could sever spiritual consciousness and soul.

【God Slay】 could destroy divine arts and spells based on spiritual energy.

With these three abilities combined and driven by sword intent, the result was the ultimate sword sought by countless sword cultivators — a single sword that could break all laws!

Rumble——!

In an instant, Ye Xingfeng merged with the sword pill.

With a single slash, the sword qi resonated like thunder.

In the blink of an eye, it reached Lü Yang!

The unmatched sharpness of the attack made Lü Yang narrow his eyes.

On the tip of the sword, a faint white light flickered.

It seemed insignificant, but upon truly seeing it, one could not help but become deeply entranced.

Locked by sword intent, there was no escape!

A lion uses its full strength even to hunt a rabbit.

How much more so for Ye Xingfeng, a direct descendant of a Golden Core True Lord?

This strike of his not only unleashed all his strength but also activated all his divine abilities!

Innate Divine Ability: 【Ten Directions Taiyi Divine Edge】 !

Innate Talent Divine Ability: 【Master of Arms】 !

At this moment, Lü Yang's Sky Measuring Instrument between his brows spun rapidly.

Opening his Dharma Eyes, he captured all of Ye Xingfeng's divine abilities in an instant.

The overwhelming sword intent made his forehead sting sharply.

The opponent's divine abilities were completely different from his own.

【Ten Directions Taiyi Divine Edge】 also contained four mysteries.

Each mystery was extremely simple — full-scale enhancement, amplifying his sword pill!

As for the innate talent divine ability 【Master of Arms】 , it also amplified the power of his weapon.

The two combined directly boosted his stats to an absurd level!

As it turned out, stacking stats really worked.

Wu Cang had failed only because he was too weak and his stats were too low.

But Ye Xingfeng's sword could sever all divine abilities and karmic ties with a single slash!

No complex mechanics, just overwhelming stats.

With such stacked stats, he needed no extra techniques.

He just had to draw his sword and slash, and nothing could stand in his way!

"So strong, unbelievably strong..."

Lü Yang sighed, then threw out the 【Mountain of Embrace】 .

In the next second, a torrent of dark light fell upon Ye Xingfeng's peerless sword qi.

It sealed the 【God Slay】 ability specifically designed to destroy divine arts on his sword pill.

Although this ability, empowered by Ye Xingfeng, had become nearly indistinguishable from a divine ability and could destroy even innate and life-bound abilities...

The 【Mountain of Embrace】 possessed both illusory and real transformations.

At this moment, transforming into illusion, the sword qi could not touch it and could only bear its oppressive weight.

Boom!

In an instant, Ye Xingfeng's aura plummeted, and his sword light dimmed significantly.

Though it remained sharp, it no longer held the power to break all laws with a single slash.

Almost simultaneously, Lü Yang's fingertips conjured another dazzling brilliance.

【Binding of Affinity and Estrangement】 !

"Goodbye."

Before Ye Xingfeng could react, his vision spun wildly.

By the time he regained his footing, Lü Yang's figure had already vanished from sight.

They were now separated by thousands of miles.

Share to your friends

Tip: You can use left, right keyboard keys to browse between chapters.

[1,468 words]

"Scoundrel!"

Seeing himself being teleported tens of thousands of miles away in an instant, the killing intent in Ye Xingfeng's eyes immediately surged, almost overflowing.

It was not just because he had been teleported away as if being toyed with by Lü Yang, but more importantly, because of Lü Yang's cultivation.

"Mid Foundation Establishment...?"

As far as he knew, Lü Yang had only been in Foundation Establishment for less than a hundred years, and within such a short time, he had already comprehended his innate divine ability, accumulated enough merit and destiny, and found a Heavenly Gang Earth Fiend.

Such a talent was truly extraordinary!

"However, he is not my match."

As a sword cultivator, Ye Xingfeng was extremely accurate in assessing the strength of both sides and had long seen that Lü Yang actually had no means to deal with his flying sword.

Although he did not know what method Lü Yang had used to seal one of his sword's profound abilities, it seemed that sealing one ability was already Lü Yang's limit.

It had some effect on his sword qi, but not much.

At most, it could teleport him away, but it could not truly harm him, let alone defeat him.

With this thought, Ye Xingfeng's killing intent grew even stronger.

This person must not be allowed to live!

In the next moment, he once again merged with his sword pill and flew toward Lü Yang's direction.

With his sword escape technique, covering tens of thousands of miles would not take long.

Meanwhile, above the Sea of Constellations.

Master Ting You looked at Lü Yang with a strange expression. "Didn't you say you wouldn't avoid his edge?"

"Master, don't misunderstand."

Lü Yang shook his head, his thick-skinned face appearing extremely calm. "I merely spared his life for now. It is not yet the time to take him down."

Before he finished speaking, Lü Yang first used the Sky-Investigating Instrument to erase the karmic lock on himself.

Then he used 【Mountain Embrace】 to quickly restrain his entire aura.

Afterward, following the faint karmic connection, he activated 【Determine Closeness and Distance】 , pierced through the void, and disappeared without a trace at lightning speed.

A dozen breaths later, sword light arrived, streaking through the air.

".Ran away?"

Ye Xingfeng's face turned ugly as he immediately pinched his fingers to calculate, attempting to deduce Lü Yang's whereabouts through karma.

However, this time, what he obtained was a complete blank.

Amidst the brilliant divine light of the flying rainbow.

Lü Yang's figure reappeared, with Master Ting You standing behind him, sighing, "You brat, this escape technique of yours is truly astonishing."

"I am not running away. I am competing with him in escape speed."

"The facts have proven that he is far inferior to me!"

Lü Yang spoke with extreme seriousness, without the slightest hint of nonsense.

Looking at his solemn expression, Master Ting You almost believed him for a moment.

"By the way, where have you escaped to now?"

Lü Yang shook his head. "I burned the remaining merit and destiny to lock onto the karmic location of 【Abyssal Sword】 and escaped here."

After speaking, Lü Yang immediately pinched his fingers to calculate.

With the assistance of the Sky-Investigating Instrument and his deep karmic entanglement with 【Abyssal Sword】 , he came here precisely to resolve this karma.

Thus, without any effort, he understood the entire cause and effect.

At the same time, the operation of 【Determine Closeness and Distance】 came to an end.

"Rustle..."

The divine light quietly dissipated.

Lü Yang looked around and found himself on an island surrounded by a faint red glow.

Outside the island was the Soul-Dissolving Wind that never ceased throughout the year.

"This is within the Foundation Establishment Realm!"

Lü Yang's eyes flashed with surprise.

This was his first time seeing something other than the Dao Foundation within the Foundation Establishment Realm.

Someone had actually built an island here?

"This place is called 【Blood Demon Island】 ."

Lü Yang rubbed his fingers and continued to deduce the information:

"Every hundred years, 【Blood Demon Island】 would fall from the Foundation Establishment Realm into the mortal world, devouring surrounding living beings to sustain the island's formation."

"The one who built this island was the original owner of 【Abyssal Sword】 , a late Foundation Establishment great true person of the Saint Sect, known as the Blood Demon."

"His soul currently resides within the island, in a state of slumber, and my task is to help him reincarnate... Reincarnate... Damn it, you've got to be kidding me!"

Suddenly, Lü Yang stopped his actions abruptly.

Because just now, he had finally calculated the method to resolve the karma he had inherited — helping the Saint Sect's Blood Demon true person reincarnate.

"This Blood Demon true person was too murderous in his lifetime."

"During one of his travels, he actually killed a naturally born immortal spirit, which brought down heavenly punishment, forcing him to live three lifetimes as a pig or dog to atone."

However, having achieved late Foundation Establishment, the Blood Demon true person was already at the end of his third lifetime.

Foundation Establishment true persons could live at most five lifetimes.

If he really went on to live three lifetimes as a pig or dog, he would end up like Arhat Fulong, with no chance of transcendence for the rest of his life.

Even worse, his previous lifetimes of cultivation would be lost in an instant.

So, he came up with a method.

He sent 【Abyssal Sword】 and 【Thirty-Nine Soul-Dissolving Gourd】 back to the Saint Sect, then hid in the Foundation Establishment Realm through 【Blood Demon Island】 , cutting himself off from reincarnation.

To put it bluntly, he forcibly refused to reincarnate.

Of course, this was only a delay tactic.

Not only was it akin to being a living corpse, worse than death itself, but as time dragged on, he still could not escape reincarnation.

So the key lay in the karma of 【Abyssal Sword】 .

The Blood Demon true person was unable to reincarnate due to heavenly punishment.

And those who took the 【Abyssal Sword】 had to help him reincarnate.

So how could they help him?

"Those bastards made me the scapegoat!"

Every person who inherited the karma of 【Abyssal Sword】 would, upon entering Blood Demon Island, be used by him to transfer part of the heavenly punishment through secret techniques.

Over time, the heavenly punishment would be completely transferred away.

And the Blood Demon true person could regain his freedom, free of debt, and re-enter reincarnation, quickly returning to late Foundation Establishment.

That was why every successive owner of 【Abyssal Sword】 died mysteriously for various reasons.

After all, they had absorbed part of the Blood Demon true person's heavenly punishment, and could not escape the calamity.

One after another, they fell.

Over time, the true persons of the Saint Sect naturally avoided it entirely.

"Beast!"

Lü Yang trembled with rage, his hands shaking.

He felt he had overestimated the bottom line of the Saint Sect's true persons.

They actually came up with such a despicable plan!

And they even specialized in screwing over their own sect's true persons!

These people had hearts blacker than ink!

Compared to these beasts of the Saint Sect, his own honest and kind-hearted self was like a white lotus, unstained by the mud, pure and untainted...

However, Lü Yang soon noticed something strange.

"『Deceiving Heaven Great Method』?"

The Blood Demon true person had actually left behind the secret technique used to transfer heavenly punishment through karma.

Anyone who inherited his karma could deduce it!

Looking at the contents of the secret technique he had deduced, Lü Yang fell into deep thought, his expression growing increasingly strange: "He deliberately left this secret technique... Damn it, could he be intentionally encouraging those who got screwed to use the same method to screw others?"

Even recruiting downline participants!

At this thought, Lü Yang's eyes suddenly lit up. "Speaking of which, I am now shrouded in heaven's killing intent, and all those connected to me by karma are waiting outside for me..."

A bold idea suddenly formed in his mind.

The principle of 『Deceiving Heaven Great Method』 was nothing more than using the karma of gifting treasures to make others bear the heavenly punishment, giving one portion of investment but gaining tenfold returns.

"Since that's the case, why don't I also learn from the advanced experience of the Saint Sect's true persons?"

"The Blood Demon true person created 【Blood Demon Island】, so I'll make one too... Yes, I'll create a newly emerged secret realm, filled with heavenly materials and earthly treasures, where all my treasures are displayed, and anyone can take them..."

Take them, and they owe me karma!

"Then I'll use the 『Deceiving Heaven Great Method』 to transfer all the heavenly punishment onto those who owe me karma, causing them to fall into inner conflicts over the treasures of the secret realm."

"Once most of them are dead and the survivors are heavily injured, I'll come out to clean up the mess, kill them all in one go, and take back all the treasures I gave away... This plan is simply a profit without any cost. The Blood Demon true person was far too conservative!"

"..."

Good grief!

Standing beside Lü Yang, Master Ting You looked helpless.

Compared to you, the pillar of the Saint Sect, what is the Blood Demon true person worth?

You are the real beast!

Share to your friends

Tip: You can use left, right keyboard keys to browse between chapters.

[1,635 words]

When he thought of it, he acted immediately. High execution had always been Lü Yang's strength.

Therefore, while the 【Blood Demon Island】 had not yet fallen out of the Foundation Establishment Realm, Lü Yang immediately began his arrangements, and he also had plans regarding the secret realm.

【Mountain of Holding】 !

"This innate divine ability, when turned illusory, can seal divine abilities, and when made real, can truly create a mountain. No one had seen it before, so it was perfect to serve as the secret realm!"

Moreover, after being materialized, the 【Mountain of Holding】 also carried the ability to suppress the spiritual qi, karma, and fortune within a certain range, which happened to match the characteristics of a secret realm.

In this way, he could send everyone into his innate divine ability, letting them step into the trap one after another!

"However, just this alone still has too many flaws."

Although the 【Mountain of Holding】 could be materialized, it was still an innate divine ability at its core, and its karma pointed directly to Lü Yang, unable to withstand close scrutiny.

Lü Yang fell into brief contemplation.

Seeing this, Ancestor Tingyou at the side finally could not help but speak: "First is the matter of karma. You can try to shift the karma onto the Blood Demon Island."

"Exactly!"

Lü Yang's eyes lit up: "Ancestor, your words make sense. Every secret realm needs a backstory. A secret realm without cause or reason is hard to fool Foundation Establishment True Persons."

"But this karma is tricky to handle." Ancestor Tingyou shook his head.

"What's so hard about it?"

Lü Yang grinned: "This 【Blood Demon Island】 doesn't look that big. I'll just dig a hole in the center of the 【Mountain of Holding】 and stuff it in there!"

"My life-bound divine ability 【Separate and Merge】 can slice, so of course it can also fuse! I'll mix the karma of my 【Mountain of Holding】 and the 【Blood Demon Island】 together until they're indistinguishable. This way, no matter who calculates it, they'll only take my 【Mountain of Holding】 as the secret realm left by the Blood Demon True Person!"

Lü Yang wasn't speaking nonsense.

If he could really stuff the 【Blood Demon Island】 into the 【Mountain of Holding】 , then this method was truly feasible, since there really was the Blood Demon True Person inside the Mountain of Holding!

With that thought, Lü Yang immediately began activating his divine ability.

In no time, a towering mountain shadow appeared within the Foundation Establishment Realm, turning from illusory to real, like a shell firmly encasing the Blood Demon Island.

"The original 【Blood Demon Island】 was still too small."

"It didn't look like a secret realm left by a late-stage Foundation Establishment True Person at all. Now with my 【Mountain of Holding】 , it finally looks somewhat grand."

At this moment, under Lü Yang's careful design, at a glance, the 【Blood Demon Island】 had already become like a mountain within a mountain at the heart of the Mountain of Holding.

The two fused together seamlessly.

Lü Yang even added a palace exterior to it, making it appear even more magnificent.

Immediately after, Lü Yang began throwing treasures onto it.

He made it as grand as possible, with the sole purpose of making everyone feel that the 【Blood Demon Island】 was the core of the secret realm and that the real treasures were hidden inside.

"It just so happens that I can let outsiders scout the path for me as well."

"Let them and the Blood Demon True Person harm each other!"

"This damned Blood Demon True Person, daring to openly use such methods to divert the Heavenly Punishment. I bet he left several backdoors as well."

Lü Yang had always been meticulous.

Since the Blood Demon True Person had set such a trap and harmed him once, how could he not retaliate?

If he didn't pay it back, how could he still hold his head high in the Primordial Saint Sect?

How could he face others in the sect in the future?

Very quickly, the secret realm was roughly constructed.

For this, Lü Yang also placed his 【Blood Sea Covering the Sky Grand Formation】 and 【Soul-Dissolving and Spirit-Seizing Smoke】 onto it, creating two deadly areas within the secret realm.

"As for the names, let's call them 【Crimson Blood Lake】 and 【Soul-Dissolving Valley】. One is a lake with blood waves surging to the sky, and the other is a valley filled with a bewildering smoke that can make even Foundation Establishment True Persons dazed. I'd better put one or two treasures inside to lure people to explore the secret realm."

"But these treasures don't need to be too good."

"After all, the real treasures are inside the 【Blood Demon Island】. The ones outside can't be too tempting. They need to be just mediocre, enough to stir people's greed but not satisfy it."

"Only when people are hooked will they gradually lose their reason."

"Coupled with the influence of robbery qi clouding their minds, by then, I guarantee those who enter the secret realm will fight each other to the death over the 【Blood Demon Island】."

The more Lü Yang designed, the more excited he became.

"Ancestor, do you have any suggestions?" Lü Yang turned his head and warmly asked Ancestor Tingyou: "Do you think there's anything that needs improvement?"

"..."

Don't compare me to you!

Ancestor Tingyou's face was full of speechlessness. Although he was also of the Demonic Path, he had always acted openly and uprightly in his life. How could he be such a deceitful and shameless person?

"The secret realm design is not bad, but it's superficial and still too rough."

"Your 【Mountain of Holding】 may be able to materialize, but its essence is still a divine ability."

Ancestor Tingyou shook his head and said: "Its biggest flaw is that it cannot withstand destruction. Once someone breaks it, your trick will be exposed immediately."

"It might fool people into entering, but it can't deceive those with real insight, at least not that mid-stage Foundation Establishment Sword Cultivator from the Jade Pivot Sword Pavilion. With her nature, she'll directly draw her sword and slash away at you. Your 【Mountain of Holding】 definitely won't hold up, and the lie will shatter with one strike."

"Ancestor speaks reasonably." Lü Yang replied patiently, "Is there a way to fix this?"

"...It's not impossible."

Ancestor Tingyou nodded.

He had created the Witch Ghost Path's secret realm back then, so he was an expert in this area and had long thought of a solution.

"Use the 【Heavenly Corpse Fiend】 !"

Lü Yang finally remembered that back then, the Witch Ghost Path had two strands of 【Heavenly Corpse Fiend】 , one given to True Person Yinshan, and the other still unused in his own possession.

He had only let Zhao Xuhe blow up the earth vein back then but didn't have him destroy the 【Heavenly Corpse Fiend】 .

After all, it was still a strand of earth fiend qi. He had thought it might have other uses in the future, and now it turned out keeping it had indeed been a wise decision!

Ancestor Tingyou continued: "Our Witch Ghost Path has a secret method that can use the 【Heavenly Corpse Fiend】 to generate a strand of earth vein qi. Although it's inferior to a true earth vein, it's still connected to heaven and earth. Destroying it will also incur Heavenly Punishment. Merging it into the 【Mountain of Holding】 will be enough to make people hesitant."

No one wanted to provoke Heavenly Punishment.

If destroying the 【Mountain of Holding】 would attract Heavenly Punishment, even someone like Ye Xingfeng would have to be extremely cautious and couldn't act recklessly just because of his own strength.

This would greatly reduce the risk of exposure.

"As for the treasures placed in the 【Mountain of Holding】 , you don't need to use real ones. You can just use those spirit banners from the Myriad Spirit Banner as substitutes."

"After all, no matter how you conceal the karma of your treasures, there's always a risk of exposure, which is more troublesome."

"However, those spirit banners of yours, for some reason, seem to have no karma at all. They look just like ownerless items, making them more convincing."

"As for the appearance of the spirit banners, they just look human on the surface, but in essence, they're composed of innate qi. If you want them to change their appearance, it's as easy as flipping your hand. Besides, a significant portion of them are transformed from our Witch Ghost Path's witch ghosts, which were originally exclusive treasures of our path."

As he spoke, Ancestor Tingyou opened up like a chatterbox.

With his late-stage Foundation Establishment insight, Lü Yang quickly perfected the 【Mountain of Holding】 , making it look like a proper grand secret realm.

"Let's go with this plan!"

Lü Yang calculated the karma and made a firm decision: "In three days, the Blood Demon Island will fall into the mortal world, landing on the Starsea...but this location isn't ideal."

It needed to be changed, moved to the Biyang Cultivation World!

After all, if he didn't do this, how could he drag the entire group of the Immortal Alliance's Dao Integration experts, including Guang Ming and the innate Daoists' karmic debts, into the trap?

At this thought, a brilliant light instantly appeared at Lü Yang's fingertip.

【Settling Suspicion】 !

This profound ability could guide the development of karma toward a direction favorable to him. Though it usually had no use, now it could fulfill Lü Yang's wish.

Under the influence of the divine ability, the falling direction of the 【Blood Demon Island】 immediately began to shift.

If the Blood Demon True Person were still alive, perhaps it couldn't be influenced, but unfortunately, the Blood Demon True Person was now dormant, and Lü Yang had broken through to mid-stage Foundation Establishment.

With the enhancement of his status, altering the landing point was no problem at all.

Thinking of this, Lü Yang immediately rubbed his hands in excitement.

"If it were just an ordinary secret realm, these people might not even be interested."

"But now, with the killing intent of heaven and earth pushing them, as long as I stay here, they will definitely come!"

By then, not a single one would be able to escape!

Share to your friends

Tip: You can use left, right keyboard keys to browse between chapters.

[1,414 words]

At the same time, within the Sea of Stars.

On the massive Fubo Warship of the Dao Court, Ying Tongshou was wiping cold sweat from his forehead while watching Ye Xingfeng, who stood at the bow of the ship, staring intently at the sky above.

Although he had now attained the rank of Fourth Grade General, equivalent to the mid-stage of Foundation Establishment, strictly speaking, he was at the same realm as Ye Xingfeng.

But he knew his own limits better than anyone.

Compared to Ye Xingfeng, the difference was not just like heaven and earth, but even wider.

Therefore, his attitude was extremely respectful.

"You are certain that man fled into a secret realm?"

At this moment, Ye Xingfeng turned his head, frowning tightly, and said, "I already swept the area with my sword intent, but found no trace of any secret realm."

"Reporting to True Person Tianxing, it still requires time."

Ying Tongshou hurriedly replied, "If that person is truly Yuan Tu, the demon from Jiangbei Demon Sect, I am certain he must have hidden inside the 【Blood Demon Island】."

"Our Dao Court's Division of Celestial Observance once performed a divination on this, stating that the demon and 【Blood Demon Island】 share a deep karmic entanglement."

"If not for this, I would not have received His Majesty's secret order and traveled all the way from Jiangdong."

"But please rest assured, True Person, at most in three days, that secret realm will descend."

"If you are deceiving me, I will cut you down," Ye Xingfeng said coldly.

"Rest assured, True Person!"

Upon hearing this, Ying Tongshou immediately patted his chest, then took out a Bagua compass: "This is the Fixed Star Compass specially bestowed upon me by the Division of Celestial Observance before I departed."

"With this, I can confirm the falling location of 【Blood Demon Island】."

"True Person, you are knowledgeable and can surely tell that I am not lying. Look, this falling location—isn't it within the Sea of Stars... sea..."

The next second, Ying Tongshou's eyes suddenly widened.

"The location... shifted?"

Ying Tongshou immediately felt a wave of sword intent lock onto him, causing his hair to stand on end.

He quickly changed his tone: "Just a technical adjustment!"

"A slight shift is not a big problem."

"True Person, look, it is still very close to the Sea of Stars. Divination is never one hundred percent accurate. A small deviation is acceptable."

Speaking up to this point, Ying Tongshou immediately employed the bureaucratic skills he had honed in the Dao Court over the years to downplay the situation and shift the responsibility: "If I am not mistaken, it should be that Lü Yang has somehow altered the falling location of the secret realm, attempting to seize the chance to escape!"

"But he did not expect that I possess the Fixed Star Compass, such a rare treasure."

"In this way, all his efforts are wasted. We just need to follow the Fixed Star Compass to catch him red-handed!"

As he spoke, even Ying Tongshou started to believe his own words.

On the other side, after hearing this, Ye Xingfeng nodded, feeling that the speculation sounded reasonable and was not baseless.

He immediately said, "Then let's pursue him."

As soon as he finished speaking, Ying Tongshou felt the sword intent locking onto him quietly dissipate.

He secretly let out a breath of relief, then immediately called out to the Dao Court's soldiers below to operate the Fubo Warship, following the guidance of the Fixed Star Compass, heading straight toward the Chaotic Sea where the Biyang Cultivation World was located.

Chaotic Sea, Biyang Cultivation World.

Inside the main hall of the Immortal Alliance headquarters, twelve powerful cultivators in the Integration Realm were surrounding the 【Imperial Palace Golden Talisman Doushuai True Edict】 , silently sacrificing their lives to refine this true treasure.

Cultivation was cultivation, and this was the destined path for every Integration Realm cultivator in Biyang Cultivation World.

However, at this moment, the most senior among them, an elderly man with white hair named Lin Lao, suddenly opened his eyes and looked toward a message sent from the outside world:

"An anomaly has appeared on the edge of the sea?"

"Ghost clouds are stirring, spiritual light is radiating, triggering waves of spiritual tides in all directions. It seems a secret realm is about to emerge, and its grade appears to be extremely high—possibly at the Foundation Establishment level."

Seeing this, Lin Lao's expression immediately turned serious.

Although the Biyang Cultivation World was isolated, it was not completely ignorant of the outside world.

Especially regarding the title "Foundation Establishment True Person," which was deeply etched in their memory.

Soon, Lin Lao spread the news.

In an instant, the entire hall erupted into discussion among the twelve Integration Realm cultivators, clearly curious about this so-called Foundation Establishment secret realm.

"Lin Lao, do you think there might be a way inside to help us break the restriction?"

"For three thousand years, this 【Imperial Palace Golden Talisman Doushuai True Edict】 has devoured countless of our fellow cultivators' lives. I don't want to end up dying by this thing either."

"I think it's worth a try!"

Amidst the various opinions, Lin Lao's expression gradually softened.

However, at this moment, he slightly tilted his head, as if he heard some strange sound.

"... All of you, leave first."

The next second, Lin Lao's expression suddenly changed, and he directly dismissed the gathered Integration Realm cultivators.

The others did not find this strange, as similar situations had happened before.

Since Lin Lao did not explain, they simply assumed he was old and needed solitude to think clearly.

However, after everyone had left.

Lin Lao raised his head and looked toward the 【Imperial Palace Golden Talisman Doushuai True Edict】 in the center of the hall, saying in a deep voice, "Come out, what do you want to say?"

"Hehe..."

Accompanied by a soft laugh, the talisman script on the 【Imperial Palace Golden Talisman Doushuai True Edict】 gradually transformed, eventually sketching out a pale golden face.

"... I am doing this for your own good as well."

The pale golden face moved its lips, and Lin Lao uncontrollably mimicked its movements, clearly being used by the other party to speak:

"I have already sensed a great karmic force about to fall into this Chaotic Sea."

"That is a person condemned by both heaven and earth, with terrifying karma. To provoke such a grand disturbance... I estimate he might be a rising star of the Primordial Saint Sect."

"But thanks to him, I now have a chance to break free."

"Break free?"

Upon hearing this, Lin Lao's face changed slightly.

He knew very well that this monster had been sealed by an Innate True Person, and theoretically, it was impossible to escape.

Not even Daoist Hong Yun had managed to rescue him back then!

"Do not panic."

"My escape is also beneficial to you."

The pale golden face continued, "After all, without me, you small fry cannot withstand that person's karma and will die miserably."

"Of course, I am in no hurry."

The pale golden face appeared extremely calm, and his mood seemed uncharacteristically pleasant: "Condemned by heaven and earth... It seems the current situation is already sufficient?"

"The karma targeting me has not yet been released by heaven and earth."

"I hope that True Person of the Primordial Saint Sect can hold on a bit longer, long enough for heaven and earth to believe that no one else can handle him except by releasing me to kill him."

At that time, it would be his opportunity to break free.

Upon hearing this, Lin Lao grew somewhat impatient: "What exactly do you want?"

"Take me to that secret realm."

The pale golden face continued, "Bring the 【Imperial Palace Golden Talisman Doushuai True Edict】 with you. This way, I might even be able to save your lives if necessary."

"This..."

Lin Lao hesitated slightly.

As the foundation of the Immortal Alliance, the 【Imperial Palace Golden Talisman Doushuai True Edict】 housed their true souls and theoretically should not be moved lightly.

However, according to the other party's words, that secret realm was undoubtedly extremely dangerous.

If they brought the 【Imperial Palace Golden Talisman Doushuai True Edict】 for protection, they might have a better chance of survival.

Moreover, if there really was a True Person from the Saint Sect, perhaps he could lift the restriction on the 【Imperial Palace Golden Talisman Doushuai True Edict】 .

After much consideration, Lin Lao finally made up his mind: "Alright, I will take you there."

After speaking, he put the 【Imperial Palace Golden Talisman Doushuai True Edict】 into his robe.

"Remember your words."

"We only seek liberation. We do not wish to die and be unable to reincarnate, forever devoured by this cursed thing as its offering."

"Liberation? What a luxurious desire."

For a moment, only the final echo of the pale golden face remained in the hall: "Heaven watches all. We, the ants, are all offerings, aren't we?"

Share to your friends

Tip: You can use left, right keyboard keys to browse between chapters.

[1,502 words]

Three days later, at the edge of the Chaotic Current Sea.

"Damn it, that scared the hell out of me!"

Ying Tongshou stood on the prow of the ship, looking at several so-called "Nascent Soul cultivators" from the Biyang Cultivation World who had been slain by his subordinates, so angry that he kicked several times in a row.

To think that at first he had believed there were mighty experts overseas!

In the end, it turned out to be a complete farce!

Thinking of this, he glanced again toward the distant horizon, only to see twelve beams of resplendent light shooting straight into the sky, appearing rather imposing.

They were clearly the twelve great cultivators of the Immortal Alliance.

The two sides had initially broken out into quite a conflict, and if Ying Tongshou had not shown up and revealed his mid-stage Foundation Establishment cultivation, they probably would not have been suppressed.

Ying Tongshou pondered in his heart.

Though these twelve temporary Foundation Establishment holders sounded formidable, in reality, they were nothing special.

At their core, they still relied on the rank of their magical treasures, similar to the 【Official Position】 he carried.

As long as the treasure was taken away, they would revert to their true form and could not be considered outstanding among their peers of the same realm.

"The key is still that strange treasure."

He had previously fought with Lin Lao, and when the latter had activated the 【Imperial Mansion Golden Seal Dou Shuai True Edict】 to resist his divine ability, it had naturally caught his eye.

"That is a fine treasure indeed!"

"If I could obtain it and offer it to the court, perhaps I could be promoted again to a first-rank official, become a third-rank general, and from then on enter the palace to participate in court affairs."

At this thought, Ying Tongshou grew even more eager.

However, he soon calmed down and began to observe his surroundings.

Suddenly, his brows furrowed slightly, feeling a bit disturbed by the scene before him.

A stretch of sea with four directions.

His side occupied the east, the south was occupied solely by Ye Xingfeng, and the west by the numerous cultivators from Biyang Cultivation World.

Weren't there a bit too many people?

"There's even a Buddhist cultivator."

Ying Tongshou's gaze shifted, spotting a bald head emerging from the crowd at the edge.

"Amitabha."

In the crowd, Guang Ming wiped his cold sweat while chanting the Buddha's name.

He wanted to flee, but a single thought rooted him in place.

'I've only just arrived overseas for a few years, and such a large secret realm has already appeared here. This must be fate. With this in mind, I have to go in and take a look. Judging by the setup, it's likely left behind by a late-stage Foundation Establishment True Person, with many treasures inside. Even if I can't get the meat, I should at least get some soup.'

Such thoughts kept sprouting endlessly.

For a moment, Guang Ming's eyes were filled with greed.

However, behind that greed, there was still a final trace of clarity and bone-deep fear.

'No! This isn't me!'

'With such a massive setup, I should be running away... No, I am a Bodhisattva, why would I need to run away... No, no, how could I be a Bodhisattva?'

At this moment, the joy of Guang Ming being promoted to the 【Fulong Temple】 temple master completely vanished.

Because he had already understood the reason.

The Pure Land Buddhist method, where the World Honored One controls the Bodhisattva, and the Bodhisattva in turn can control the Arhat.

At this moment, his "true self" was transforming into the 【Precious Vase Water Moon Bodhisattva】 !

This was not about manipulating karma, but a more direct form of control.

Whatever the 【Precious Vase Water Moon Bodhisattva】 wanted Guang Ming to do, Guang Ming would do it.

After all, these were originally "his" own thoughts, so what could be wrong with them?

Rather, the fact that Guang Ming could sense something amiss was already a testament to his strong self-awareness.

In his view, such "adventurous" behavior was not his usual style.

No matter how much he felt it was "his own" idea, it still felt somewhat off.

Unfortunately, it was ultimately the Bodhisattva's will.

So as time passed, Guang Ming's expression gradually returned to calm, with the previous struggle vanishing without a trace, leaving only greed and stupidity.

Just then, all the Foundation Establishment True Persons present suddenly raised their heads.

They saw in the sky above, a jet-black light suddenly appear out of nowhere, like a spark of fire, but in an instant, it expanded with the wind, spreading across the sky like ink on paper.

In the blink of an eye, the spiritual energy surged violently!

As a dim black radiance spread from the Foundation Establishment realm, a deafening boom reverberated across heaven and earth.

"Boom!"

The spiritual tide exploded, the five elements intertwined, and immediately various types of spiritual mist formed.

Afterward, a towering mountain silhouette slowly began to manifest in the present world.

And as the mountain shadow emerged, a massive suppressive force descended from the sky.

Apart from Ye Xingfeng, whose sword energy automatically activated and remained unaffected, Ying Tongshou, Guang Ming, and even the group of great cultivators from

the Immortal Alliance all felt their bodies suddenly sink, as if they were trapped in a quagmire.

"What a formidable secret realm!"

Ying Tongshou showed a look of shock.

"Just the suppressive force innate to this secret realm alone feels almost comparable to a natural divine ability."

Before long, the light faded away.

The towering mountain plunged straight into the Chaotic Current Sea, stirring waves in all directions, fully revealing itself before everyone, and for a moment, no one dared to act rashly.

"So this is the 【Blood Demon Island】 ?"

Ye Xingfeng stood in mid-air, calculating with his fingers.

He found that the karmic ties indeed fell within this towering mountain, yet he still felt something was off.

His painstakingly forged sword heart even began to warn him on its own.

This mountain... seemed somewhat familiar?

Ye Xingfeng frowned deeply.

If it had been in the past, he might have taken the time to ponder and investigate carefully.

However, now he quickly dismissed the idea of probing further.

"Come to think of it, it's only natural that my sword heart would warn me. After all, this is a secret realm laid down by a late-stage Foundation Establishment True Person. It would be strange if there were no danger."

"Moreover, regardless of anything else, that Witch Ghost inheritor must have hidden inside. The priority now is to find him and kill him to eliminate future trouble once and for all!"

With this thought, Ye Xingfeng no longer hesitated.

Clang clang——!

With a sword cry that echoed through the sky, Ye Xingfeng merged with his sword light, and his figure vanished from sight, clearly having charged into the black mountain.

With someone taking the lead, the others naturally had no more reservations.

Ying Tongshou followed closely behind.

The group of great cultivators from the Immortal Alliance hurried after him.

Only Guang Ming lagged at the very end, but he still stumbled into the mountain amidst his internal struggle.

This scene was all witnessed by Lü Yang.

"Finally, they've entered the trap!"

Lü Yang exhaled deeply, a sinister smile appearing on his face.

Half the battle was already won!

Because now, he could contact Qingcheng Feixue True Monarch with his hand-written book, and let the True Monarch unleash a massive attack, killing everyone in one go!

However, Lü Yang quickly calmed himself down and regained his composure.

His eyes narrowed slightly, sharp as an eagle's, revealing a thick sense of vengeance.

"No rush. That primary Dao Calamity has yet to appear."

Lü Yang had not forgotten his main objective.

While clearing his own karma was important, it was even more crucial to use the True Monarch's hand to uncover the secret of the first-grade True Qi in the Biyang Cultivation World.

Thus, the primary Dao Calamity left behind by the Innate True Person was the real key.

"As long as I confirm the cultivation method and hidden dangers of the first-grade True Qi, I can reset next time and return to the first anchor point to rebuild my Dao foundation and cultivate anew."

Aside from that, there was still Daoist Hong Yun who had not appeared.

"That old schemer never showed up in the previous life. Who knows where he's hiding now? I wonder if I can lure him out this time and trap him to kill him in one strike..."

Moreover, with so many people present, there must be a lot of good things on them.

But if he let Feixue True Monarch make a move directly, following the sect's traditions, he definitely wouldn't get to keep anything for himself.

So if he didn't exhaust every means to loot the place first, wouldn't that be a waste of the trap he had set?

After the True Monarch took action, everything would belong to the True Monarch.

But before the True Monarch made a move, whatever he could grab would all be his!

Especially the techniques of the Jade Pivot Sword Pavilion—he had coveted them for a long time.

"Fortune favors the bold. With the True Monarch as my backup, what am I afraid of?"

Without further hesitation!

With that in mind, Lü Yang immediately locked onto a direction on 【Baoshou Mountain】 , then activated 【Determining Closeness and Distance】 and flew away in a streak of escape light.

Share to your friends

Tip: You can use left, right keyboard keys to browse between chapters.

[1,323 words]

Within the [Embracing Mountain].

"This [Blood Demon Island] is truly extraordinary. The suppressive force is immense; even Foundation Establishment True Persons can only fly and escape, finding it difficult to employ any teleportation techniques."

Ying Tongshou rode his escape light, surveying the surrounding environment.

Wherever his gaze landed, he saw towering mountain peaks, yet not a single human figure was in sight. Only the ground was littered with dried bones and various peculiar magical tools.

"Another one!"

Suddenly, Ying Tongshou reached out and grabbed, quickly retrieving a magical tool resembling a pagoda from the forest. Pale white smoke continuously wafted from the tower.

This acquisition made Ying Tongshou beam with joy. This was already the third magical tool he had obtained since entering the secret realm. Although such items were useless to a Foundation Establishment True Person like him, they were excellent for rewarding subordinates and winning hearts. After all, who would mind having an extra magical tool?

After a while, Ying Tongshou once again displayed an excited expression.

However, this time, a light flew in from the distance, colliding directly with him. Revealing its form, it turned out to be the Integration Realm cultivator, Lin Lao.

At the same time, within the perilous area meticulously crafted by Lü Yang, the [Soul-Scattering Valley].

Led by Mu Huan, five Integration Realm cultivators from the Immortal Alliance stood cautiously outside the valley, carefully collecting the [Soul-Scattering Spirit-Dispersing God-Stealing Smoke] within.

"These are all treasures."

Mu Huan sighed, "Even we, upon contact with this smoke, would have our souls bewildered. If we could refine it into a magical tool, its power would undoubtedly be formidable!"

Just then, a divine light descended from the sky.

As the radiance dissipated, Lü Yang's figure appeared. He glanced at Mu Huan and the others, then nodded in satisfaction. They had taken his treasure.

The cause and effect were established!

In the next moment, Lü Yang employed the Heaven-Deceiving Great Technique. The heavenly punishment force previously transferred to him by the Blood Demon True Person using the [Abi Sword] was now redirected to Mu Huan and the others through the cause and effect of the [Soul-Scattering Spirit-Dispersing God-Stealing Smoke]. Instantly, he felt his essence, energy, and spirit rejuvenated.

"What did you do!?"

On the other side, Mu Huan sternly questioned. Although he couldn't perceive the changes in cause and effect or the transfer of heavenly punishment force, his intuition sensed something amiss.

"What did I do?"

Lü Yang squinted his eyes upon hearing this, then displayed a righteous expression: "You all forcibly seized my magical tool and now question me about my actions?"

"Moreover, you people in the Biyang Cultivation World use all beings as materials, committing heinous crimes. Today, suffering heavenly punishment, I must act on behalf of the heavens, eliminate the strong, support the weak, and annihilate you demons!"

Upon hearing this, Mu Huan couldn't help but laugh in anger.

"Eliminate the strong and support the weak? We are merely overseas rogue cultivators. If you wish to eliminate the strong and support the weak, you should target that sword cultivator. Why come after us?"

Lü Yang shook his head, "Because he's too strong."

One should still pick the soft persimmons to squeeze.

Mu Huan was momentarily speechless, but as if recalling something, he looked at Lü Yang with a probing tone: "Are you a cultivator from the Primordial Saint Sect?"

"....."

How did he recognize that? Do I not look like a good person?

Lü Yang wore a helpless expression, then simply waved his hand;

"You know too much!"

Clang clang——!

The Abi Sword was summoned in mid-air, and as the sword light descended, Mu Huan and the others dared not confront it directly. They immediately attempted to flee, only to feel a tremendous pressure descending upon them.

[Embracing Mountain]!

In an instant, the suppressive force on Mu Huan and the others multiplied several times, causing their movements to stiffen abruptly. They could only watch helplessly as the sword light descended.

"Thud!"

The sword light circled around their necks, and the five Integration Realm cultivators instantly transformed into headless corpses, their true energy and flesh completely drained.

The excited sword cry of the Abi Sword echoed through the clouds. Lü Yang, witnessing this scene, nodded in satisfaction. In his previous life, twelve Integration Realm cultivators had helped the Abi Sword recover its second divine ability, [Treading Danger]. In this life, by killing them again, could he perhaps restore another divine ability?

With this thought, Lü Yang immediately extended his finger, drawing a divine light.

The light flickered, illuminating all the scenes within the [Embracing Mountain]. This was his innate divine ability, allowing him to fully grasp its changes.

Moreover, it was precisely because he manipulated things behind the scenes that everyone was forced to separate.

Otherwise, if everyone stayed together, he wouldn't have the opportunity to defeat them individually. Only by separating them could he hunt them down as he did now.

In the next moment, Lü Yang disappeared from his original spot.

Tonight, let the hunt be exhilarating!

At the center of the [Embracing Mountain], on the true [Blood Demon Island].

Deep within the [Blood Demon Island], inside a palace entirely constructed from white bones, lay a breathtakingly bizarre scene.

It was a tree of utmost eeriness.

The tree's roots were strands of flesh and blood, its bark resembled human skin, and the leaves on its trunk were pieces of bone, emitting sharp sounds as they swayed.

However, in the next moment, the tree suddenly underwent a new transformation. At the top of the canopy, a brilliantly red flower bloomed, then quickly withered, and suddenly bore fruit. Astonishingly, the fruit resembled a baby with limbs and closed eyes!

"Hmm, am I awake?"

The baby opened its eyes, and on its still undeveloped face, a visibly human-like expression of confusion appeared.

"Why so soon?"

According to his calculations, the heavenly punishment on him would require at least three more generations of sword masters to be distributed before he could recover to his current state.

But now, he had awakened early!

The heavenly punishment had also inexplicably lessened significantly.

"Could it be that I'm lucky, and this generation's [Abi Sword] master is favored by fortune, with profound merit, thus able to absorb more of the heavenly punishment?"

With this thought, he immediately began to sense the situation.

Soon, the just-awakened Blood Demon True Person opened his eyes, the baby's small eyes filled with deep confusion, appearing somewhat at a loss:

"Where is this place?"

"Why has my [Blood Demon Island] become so large?"

The Blood Demon True Person's frown deepened as he attempted to calculate cause and effect. However, Lü Yang had long used the Heaven-Observing Instrument to obscure the heavenly secrets, yielding no results.

At this moment, a loud noise suddenly erupted:

"Boom!"

A brilliant sword aura charged into the [Blood Demon Island], revealing Ye Xingfeng, who was slashing his way directly toward the Blood Demon True Person!

"Something's wrong. I've been set up?"

The Blood Demon True Person's expression turned grim, instantly realizing he had been tricked. It seemed this generation's [Abi Sword] master was quite resourceful.

As a senior True Person of the Saint Sect, the Blood Demon True Person was no fool. A brief contemplation made Lü Yang's plan clear: to use others to eliminate him, thereby resolving the influence of heavenly punishment and severing cause and effect, while reaping the benefits from the conflict between others and himself.

"Truly inheriting the essence of our Saint Sect. Unfortunately, still too young!"

The Blood Demon True Person's lips curled into a mocking smile: "Daring to scheme against a True Person is truly overestimating oneself."

Even in his weakest state, not just anyone could manipulate him.

Because for a True Person, strength lies not only in power but also in identity and background!

Especially for a Saint Sect True Person like him, backed by a True Lord!

In such circumstances, who could kill him?

Precisely because of this, even with Ye Xingfeng already attacking, and knowing he had been schemed against, the Blood Demon True Person remained unflustered.

"As long as I release my own cause and effect, no longer concealing it, the Fortunate True Lord will immediately sense it. At that time, with the True Lord's intervention, saving me would be a breeze."

As for the Saint Sect junior's scheme?

Merely a laughingstock!

Share to your friends

Tip: You can use left, right keyboard keys to browse between chapters.

[1,354 words]

Blood Demon True Person's confidence appeared groundless, yet it was not without reason.

In fact, even outside the Primordial Saint Sect, if any other sect, big or small, could produce a late Foundation Establishment True Person, it would be an earth-shaking change.

Because a True Person held the hope of seeking Golden Core.

Even if this hope was pitifully low, nearly non-existent, it was still a sliver of hope, and even a sliver was enough to warrant attention.

Thus, any True Person generally faced three outcomes:

The first was that the fruit position pointed by the Dao Foundation was vacant, not controlled by the four great forces.

This was the freest situation, yet also the most unsupported, for without backing, it was the most likely to fail in seeking Golden Core.

The second was being born in a prestigious sect.

For example, True Person Chong Guang, whose fruit position was in the Primordial Saint Sect, supported by a True Lord of the Sect, had the greatest hope of seeking Golden Core.

The third was when the fruit position was already taken.

Both Lü Yang and Ancestor Ting You were like this.

One had their fruit position preemptively claimed, while the other's position was held by the Pure Land, barring others from seeking it.

Such circumstances were practically hopeless.

True Persons caught in this dilemma would either be killed directly by the True Lord holding the fruit position or surrender their pursuit of Golden Core and be absorbed under that True Lord.

Ancestor Ting You was the former.

Blood Demon True Person was the latter.

Indeed, the fruit position Blood Demon True Person sought was also the Covered Lamp Fire, but unlike True Person Chong Guang, his choice was to be absorbed by Daoist Hong Yun, who was still a True Lord at that time.

In fact, the 『Deceiving Heaven Grand Method』 that allowed him to survive until now was specially derived and handed to him by Daoist Hong Yun.

Thus, the moment Blood Demon True Person no longer concealed his karmic ties, Daoist Hong Yun, far away on the horizon, immediately sensed it.

His brows furrowed slightly as he looked up toward the firmament.

".Blood Demon? He survived?"

At this moment, Daoist Hong Yun was not in the present world but located within the Foundation Establishment Realm.

What was shocking was that there was no presence of Bifeng around him!

Bifeng was the tribulation of the Foundation Establishment Realm.

Whether at the early, middle, late, or peak stages, as long as one was still a Foundation Establishment True Person, they would inevitably endure the erosion and corrosion of Bifeng upon their soul.

Yet, at this moment, the area where Daoist Hong Yun resided, though small, was entirely free of Bifeng.

Even the Bifeng from the outside world would shatter like waves crashing upon rocks when reaching this area, unable to enter.

And this was even the result after damage.

Thinking back to the past, when he stood atop the fruit position, how resounding was the fame of the 【Changyao Precious Light Grotto-Heaven】 ?

It truly attracted countless True Persons who sought shelter under his command.

But now, it had come to this state.

The former 【Changyao Precious Light Grotto-Heaven】 was shattered.

Despite his desperate efforts to salvage it, only this fragment, barely qualifying as a blessed land, remained.

Even so, he had nearly failed to take control of it.

The reason was simple—he was too weak.

A hundred years ago, his cultivation had only barely recovered to mid Foundation Establishment.

He was so weak that even the Peak Master of Mending Heaven Peak knew and dared to challenge him openly.

For this reason, he had no choice but to fish for fortunes several times within the Primordial Saint Sect, seizing opportunities.

Until he produced Xiao Shiye and obtained the fortune of the colorful Merit Fish, he finally gained enough confidence.

He immediately concealed his karma and secluded himself for a hundred years.

Now, a century later, he had finally refined the remaining fragment of his former grotto-heaven into the current 【Precious Radiance Blessed Land】 .

He had barely restored his cultivation to peak Foundation Establishment.

Yet, he feared being discovered and thus had been hiding in this blessed land, not daring to show himself.

After all, Daoist Hong Yun knew very well about that Clear Snow True Lord backing True Person Chong Guang.

That was a lunatic woman.

True Person Chong Guang was entirely nurtured by her, and his achievement of the Dao greatly benefited her cultivation.

She would never tolerate anyone destroying this.

Previously, she had not acted because he was too weak.

But once she learned that he had restored his peak Foundation Establishment cultivation and could compete with True Person Chong Guang, she would absolutely not hesitate to kill him in advance!

However, at this moment, Daoist Hong Yun found himself in a dilemma.

"Blood Demon... he's a good seedling. If I could nurture him to contend with Chong Guang on my behalf, perhaps he could draw away some attention for me."

Daoist Hong Yun calculated with his fingers, and clarity immediately arose in his heart.

"So that's how it is. It's the karma of the 【Sword of Avīci】 that brought trouble upon him."

"Now he's being hunted by a sword cultivator from Jiangnan, so he seeks my aid."

At first glance, it seemed not that dangerous.

Though he had fallen from the fruit position, his cultivation remained.

Under his calculations, few could escape his notice, unless they were connected to a True Lord.

Such as carrying an incarnation of a True Lord.

Or being a failed Dao nemesis who had failed to seek Golden Core.

"Hahaha."

As he pondered, Daoist Hong Yun couldn't help but laugh.

He knew Blood Demon True Person's abilities well—how could he have provoked an enemy of that level?

Impossible! Absolutely impossible!

In his calculations, the strongest was merely that mid Foundation Establishment sword cultivator from the Sword Pavilion.

Such strength was indeed formidable among mid Foundation Establishment cultivators.

But to Daoist Hong Yun, who had already restored his peak Foundation Establishment cultivation, it was nothing more than a matter of a single finger—completely negligible.

"Then I shall make the trip!"

With that thought, Daoist Hong Yun finally stopped hesitating.

With a flick of his sleeve, he stood up and began walking toward Blood Demon True Person's direction while also sending him a message.

"Hold on a bit longer for me?"

Receiving the message conveyed through the karmic net, Blood Demon True Person was slightly stunned.

Something felt off.

Shouldn't a True Lord just break through the void and scoop him up with a giant hand?

Blood Demon True Person felt an ominous premonition.

But no matter what, Daoist Hong Yun's response was still a glimmer of hope, so he stopped overthinking.

"Hmm?"

Seeing Ye Xingfeng's sword light about to strike him down, Blood Demon True Person suddenly sensed something and looked toward a certain direction.

Immediately, joy surfaced on his face.

"The third mystery of the 【Sword of Avīci】 has been activated?"

"Good!"

In the next moment, Blood Demon True Person suddenly formed a hand seal and sneered, "Ignorant junior, using my magical tool and thinking I wouldn't leave a hidden trump card?"

Almost simultaneously, in another location.

Lü Yang had just found the other Dao Integration cultivators of the Immortal Alliance.

Apart from Lin Lao, who held the 【Imperial Mansion Golden Seal Doushuai True Edict】 , the others had all been slain by him.

And the result was just as he had expected.

After devouring the true qi and flesh of eleven Dao Integration cultivators, the 【Sword of Avīci】 fully recovered to its peak state, and the third mystery emerged.

Its name was: 【Named Tool】 .

"In all the world, only name and tool cannot be entrusted to another."

"Through the recognition of the 【Named Tool】 , the designated sword master shall forever enjoy the primary control of the 【Sword of Avīci】 ."

In an instant, Lü Yang's expression turned as dark as water.

It turned out to be a recognition mystery!

In the next moment, the just fully restored 【Sword of Avīci】 suddenly trembled.

In an instant, it severed its connection with Lü Yang and tried to break through the void and fly away!

Obviously, Blood Demon True Person was the one recognized by the 【Named Tool】 as the true sword master.

From beginning to end, he was the real owner of the 【Sword of Avīci】 .

The reason he had sent out the 【Sword of Avīci】 , besides sharing the Heavenly Punishment, was probably to use outsiders to help repair and perfect it!

Now that it was repaired, naturally, he was going to take it back!

Share to your friends

Tip: You can use left, right keyboard keys to browse between chapters.

Chapter 192: Abyss is Only Happy in Master's Hands

[1,603 words]

"I knew that old thing left a backdoor on the 【Abyss Sword】 !"

Lü Yang held the Abyss Sword, but could no longer sense any response from the sword spirit within.

The hand gripping the sword was still constantly suffering the backlash of sword qi.

There was no doubt that the mysterious ability of a 【Named Weapon】 was the confidence that Blood Demon True Person relied on to dare give away the 【Abyss Sword】 he had painstakingly refined.

It was clear that he had already planned to burn the bridge after crossing it.

One could only say that all the True Persons of the Saint Sect were like this, and none of the opportunities they created could be trusted.

—Fortunately, he was not unprepared either.

"The Deceiving Heaven Great Art has not yet failed. The Abyss Sword is in my hands, and I have taken the heavenly punishment for you. Now, if you want to take it back, you must compensate me for the loss of my merits and fortune!"

Lü Yang was not unfamiliar with the 『Deceiving Heaven Great Art』 .

After all, the principle of this secret art was very simple.

It was to use a small cost to gain tenfold profit.

But no matter what, that small cost still had to be paid.

No matter how big the difference, it was still a matter of give and take.

If Blood Demon True Person had already completely resolved the heavenly punishment and withdrawn the Deceiving Heaven Great Art, then naturally it wouldn't matter.

Recalling the 【Abyss Sword】 would require no price.

However, since he still needed the Deceiving Heaven Great Art to struggle for his life, he naturally could not violate its rules.

So if he wanted to take back the Abyss Sword, he had to compensate Lü Yang for the loss of merits and fortune caused by the heavenly punishment.

Only then would the transaction be considered complete.

"Hmph!"

At the same time, Blood Demon True Person also sensed the change in karma.

His expression darkened slightly, but he did not care too much and decisively mobilized merits and fortune.

"Fine, take it!"

Although he had lost part of his merits and fortune, now that Ye Xingfeng had already arrived in front of him, if he did not take back the 【Abyss Sword】 , he would find it hard to resist him.

"This debt, we'll settle it later."

Blood Demon True Person swore fiercely in his heart while continuing to summon the Abyss Sword.

However, on the other side, Lü Yang let out a cold sneer after receiving the merits and fortune sent by Blood Demon True Person.

He immediately took out a wisp of yellow smoke.

【Heavenly Corpse Fiend】 !

Strictly speaking, it was a trace of earth vein qi created by Ancestor Ting You using the 【Heavenly Corpse Fiend】 .

Once destroyed, it would immediately attract heavenly punishment!

The next moment, Lü Yang unhesitatingly wrapped the earth vein qi around the 【Abyss Sword】 like a sword sheath.

If the Abyss Sword wanted to fly away, it had to shatter the earth vein qi.

And once the earth vein qi was broken, Blood Demon True Person, as the instigator, would suffer heavenly punishment!

"Alright, you can take it now."

Lü Yang let go of his hand, no longer restraining the 【Abyss Sword】 , and even kindly concealed the karma on the sword for Blood Demon True Person, ensuring he could not detect the situation.

The next second, the Abyss Sword decisively shattered the earth vein qi and turned into a blood-colored long rainbow, flying toward Blood Demon True Person.

Moments later—

"No!!!"

A miserable scream suddenly rang out from 【Blood Demon Island】 .

At the same time, thunder rumbled in the sky and struck down on Blood Demon True Person!

Heavenly punishment!

In an instant, Blood Demon True Person felt the heavenly punishment, which had already been greatly reduced, intensify once again.

Not to mention that he had just compensated Lü Yang with part of his merits and fortune.

The result was a double loss.

He could already foresee that he might have to reincarnate for several lifetimes as a pig or a dog!

What should he do?

Blood Demon True Person's soul trembled, and the fury in his heart nearly exploded.

However, in the end, he still made the most rational choice.

Return the Abyss Sword!

The next moment, the 【Abyss Sword】 that had just flown back was sent back again by Blood Demon True Person, teeth clenched, along with a portion of the heavenly punishment power.

However, this time, Lü Yang decisively chose to refuse.

"You still want me to bear the heavenly punishment for you? Sure, lift the mysterious ability of the 【Named Weapon】 and completely give the 【Abyss Sword】 to me. Then I'll help you one more time."

Blood Demon True Person: "..."

Beast!

Blood Demon True Person instinctively wanted to refuse, but in the end, he maintained clarity.

He could not refuse, because right now, Lü Yang was the only one willing to bear this karma!

Of course, he could transfer the 【Abyss Sword】 to someone else.

But now that his identity had been exposed, if he gave the 【Abyss Sword】 to anyone else, everyone would know there was definitely a problem.

Who would be willing to take on this karma?

Only Lü Yang, who knew the inside story, still had room for negotiation.

Therefore, Blood Demon True Person did not hesitate for too long.

After all, compared to Lü Yang, who seemed calm and unhurried, Blood Demon True Person was undoubtedly more anxious and had no bargaining power.

"...Fine!"

The next moment, the red light on the 【Abyss Sword】 suddenly flashed.

Then Lü Yang saw the connection between it and Blood Demon True Person sever.

【Named Weapon】 without a master!

Lü Yang finally let out a hearty laugh and gripped the 【Abyss Sword】 in his hand once again.

He poured all his mana into the sword, filling its blade completely.

As for the heavenly punishment transferred over?

Lü Yang remained unhurried.

He directly used the merits and fortune he had just received from Blood Demon True Person to resist most of the heavenly punishment power.

As for the remaining heavenly punishment, Lü Yang used the Deceiving Heaven Great Art to shift most of it away.

The residual effects were negligible, about the same as the aftermath of detonating an earth vein in the past.

It was still within his acceptable range.

More importantly, from now on, the 【Abyss Sword】 would completely belong to him!

"Come, say goodbye to your old master."

"Abyss does not recognize any old master."

With a surge of Lü Yang's mana, the sword spirit of the 【Abyss Sword】 immediately emerged and affectionately rubbed against his cheek.

"Abyss only feels happy in Master's hands."

This scene made Blood Demon True Person's eyes almost burst with rage.

Seeing his once-owned 【Named Weapon】 taken by Lü Yang, and knowing he had handed it over personally, Blood Demon True Person's soul nearly exploded with anger.

"Boom!"

At this moment, a burst of sword qi descended.

The great hall where Blood Demon True Person was located was split apart.

Ye Xingfeng's figure emerged, stepping out on unparalleled sword light.

"Hmm?"

Ye Xingfeng glanced around and frowned slightly.

"The Witch Ghost successor... isn't here?"

Blood Demon True Person was also stunned.

"You're not here to kill me?"

When Ye Xingfeng had appeared, he had flown toward Blood Demon True Person at lightning speed.

Blood Demon True Person had thought the other party had come to kill him!

After all, he was a great True Person of the Saint Sect.

It was perfectly reasonable for a sword cultivator from the Jade Pivot Sword Pavilion to want to kill him.

But now, looking again, could it be that the other party's target had never been him?

Then who?

Thinking of this, Blood Demon True Person's soul trembled once more.

"You again!?"

"That's right, it's me again."

In the distance, Lü Yang calmly smiled.

【Mount Embracing】 and 【Blood Demon Island】 had long been merged together by him using the 【Divergent Illusion】 .

Their karmic ties were indistinguishable.

So he merely used the Heaven Measuring Instrument to slightly confuse the location, changing 【Lü Yang at Mount Embracing】 into 【Lü Yang at Blood Demon Island】 , easily fooling Ye Xingfeng!

"It's not over yet..."

Lü Yang's eyes brightened as he looked in another direction.

Two streams of escaping light were flying toward them.

They were none other than Ying Tongshou of the Jiangdong Dao Court and the last Integration Stage cultivator of the Immortal Alliance, Lin Lao.

For some reason, the two had actually chosen to act together.

However, compared to Blood Demon True Person and Ye Xingfeng, the two were in extremely poor condition.

Since Lü Yang had set his plans in motion, Ye Xingfeng had a flawless sword heart and no interest in treasures.

Blood Demon True Person had deep cultivation and barely maintained clarity.

But Ying Tongshou and Lin Lao were different.

Both had looted wildly in the secret realm, had massive amounts of heavenly punishment transferred onto them by Lü Yang through the Deceiving Heaven Great Art, and their merits and fortune had been severely depleted.

Their minds clouded by calamity, they had long fallen into delusion, leaving only their strongest obsessions.

So what were their obsessions?

"His Majesty's secret order: recover Blood Demon True Person's soul to force Lü Yang to Jiangdong."

"Find the Saint Sect True Person and unlock the 【Imperial Mansion Golden Seal Doushuai True Decree】's restriction."

Both Lü Yang and Blood Demon True Person matched the obsessions of the two.

However, since Lü Yang had not appeared, the natural target was Blood Demon True Person!

Immediately, a leisurely voice rang out.

"Blood Demon True Person is right before you. What are you waiting for?"

"Do it!"

As the voice fell, a divine ability shone brightly.

【Sealing Suspicion】!

Lü Yang's life-bound divine ability could lock the development of events to the result he desired.

Normally, it could not be used against cultivators of the same realm.

However, at this moment, Ying Tongshou and Lin Lao had already suffered too much heavenly punishment.

With their merits and fortune depleted, it was the perfect opportunity!

The next second, the two did not hesitate any longer.

One took out a golden imperial decree.

The other brought out the 【Imperial Mansion Golden Seal Doushuai True Decree】 !

Share to your friends

Tip: You can use left, right keyboard keys to browse between chapters.

Chapter 193: It Has Escalated!

[1,408 words]

Only at this moment did Lü Yang's plan finally yield the result he had desired, which was to provoke a four-sided war and reap the benefits as the fisherman in the end.

At this rate, he was destined to become the final victor.

However, without a doubt, the Heaven and Earth Killing Will that had been locked onto him from beginning to end, aiming to make 【Lü Yang die overseas】 , would never allow such a thing to happen.

And so, the situation escalated.

Just like in the previous lifetime with 【Wu Cang killing Lü Yang】 , when Wu Cang was no match for Lü Yang, the Heaven and Earth Killing Will had allowed Dao Calamity to possess Wu Cang.

The same happened in this lifetime.

The moment Lü Yang had skillfully maneuvered the situation, using his mystical techniques to provoke a four-sided war, the Heaven and Earth Killing Will began pushing new variables into motion.

At that moment, they saw Ying Tongshou, his mind clouded by calamity, take out the golden imperial edict to suppress Blood Demon Daoist, while Blood Demon Daoist was ready to fight to the death.

Suddenly, that imperial edict exploded with a brilliant golden light.

At that moment, everyone present froze!

The same thought surfaced in everyone's mind.

Someone... was watching.

Jiangdong Dao Court, early morning.

It was the moment when the Golden Crow spat out the sun, just before sunrise, with only the faint glow on the horizon slowly illuminating a majestic palace.

【Tian Wu Palace】

Inside this palace, beneath layers of hanging curtains, stood a tall, handsome young man dressed in yellow robes.

Suddenly, the young man in yellow robes opened his eyes and let out a soft hum.

Instantly, all the coiling dragon pillars within 【Tian Wu Palace】 reacted.

The dragon sculptures, which were supposed to be mere carvings, suddenly seemed to come alive, baring their fangs and claws, all turning their gaze toward the young man.

Every thought and action echoed through the surroundings.

Throughout Jiangdong, only one person possessed such a strange phenomenon.

He was none other than the Dao Court Emperor of this generation, the Tian Wu royal family's emperor, the ruler of hundreds of millions of people in Jiangdong!

At that moment, as he had been resting with his eyes closed, he suddenly opened them wide.

Unlike ordinary people, the Tian Wu royal bloodline was unique.

The imperial offspring were born with a pair of jade-green eyes.

At that moment, his gaze astonishingly crossed millions of miles of territory!

Almost simultaneously, on 【Blood Demon Island】 .

As the Dao Court Emperor's gaze descended, the imperial edict in Ying Tongshou's hand floated into the air, reflecting the heavenly light and projecting a figure with hands behind his back.

A single thought, and an avatar appeared!

In fact, this wasn't even a true avatar, but merely a projected gaze of the distant Dao Court Emperor, not even a billionth of his true power!

Yet, even so, the moment this avatar appeared, Ying Tongshou dropped to his knees without a word.

On the other side, Blood Demon True Person and Ye Xingfeng, who had been standing in midair, staggered as their light dissipated, falling straight to the ground.

Only the old man from the Immortal Alliance was different.

At this moment, not only did he remain composed, but he also straightened his back, relaxed his brow, and wore an arrogant expression.

In the blink of an eye, he even transformed into the appearance of a young man!

"Hahaha! Finally, finally, I've been let out!"

The old man, or rather the Dao Calamity of the Innate True Person, laughed loudly toward the sky.

His aura surged rapidly, not inferior to the Dao Court Emperor's avatar at all!

"Interesting..."

Seeing this, the Dao Court Emperor's avatar couldn't help but look over with a surprised expression.

"There's actually a surviving Dao Calamity overseas?"

Two figures, both touching the Golden Core level!

Although one was an avatar formed by a distant gaze, and the other was a failed Golden Core turned Dao Calamity, to Foundation Establishment cultivators, they were still overwhelming forces!

But this wasn't the end.

"Clang! Clang!"

The next second, a dazzling sword light burst from Ye Xingfeng's body.

It came from a small jade sword hanging at his waist.

At the same time, in Jiangnan Sword Pavilion.

On Extreme Heaven Cliff.

That same boyish True Monarch with rosy lips and white teeth, sitting with his hand on his sword and eyes closed, remained silent.

Behind him, several Sword Pavilion True Persons were conversing.

“True Person Tian Xing has been overseas for some time now.”

“Why hasn’t he returned yet?”

“After all, it’s a True Person from the Demon Sect, difficult to kill. It’s normal. Besides, True Person Tian Xing carries the sword intent left by the True Monarch. There shouldn’t be any issues.”

“True enough...”

Before the words fell, a soft sound suddenly echoed across Extreme Heaven Cliff.

In an instant, all the True Persons instinctively held their breath, their eyes nervously looking toward the boyish figure sitting on the cliff.

Then, to everyone’s shock, that young True Monarch who had kept his eyes closed for over a hundred years suddenly opened them.

Reflected in his pupils was a dazzling starlight, as he looked straight at them and calmly asked, “What year is it tonight?”

“Greetings to 【Chengtian Zhengde True Monarch】 !”

Facing the salutes from the True Persons, the young True Monarch merely nodded slightly, then slowly stood up.

After making a brief calculation, he gradually frowned.

“Xingfeng... entangled in calamity, because of Ting You?”

At the mention of 【Ting You】 , the young True Monarch’s expression visibly darkened.

The joy of emerging from seclusion was clouded by a new shadow.

A thousand years had passed, and few still remembered Ancestor Ting You.

Even those who knew rarely understood how astonishing Ancestor Ting You had been back then.

But as Ting You's direct competitor and Dao enemy, the young True Monarch would never forget the shock that person had brought him.

Back then, Ting You had merely been a cultivator from a small sect, just entering Foundation Establishment, not yet reincarnated.

And he?

A great True Person of the Sword Pavilion, having cultivated to perfection over four lifetimes, already plotting to ascend the throne.

The gap had been so vast that he hadn't even paid Ting You any mind at first.

Then, Ting You caught up.

Over a hundred years ago, while he was still in seclusion preparing to attain Golden Core, over a century later, he heard that a Foundation Establishment cultivator from a small sect was also preparing to seek Golden Core.

Was that even human?

What was even more outrageous was that, relying on the advantage of accumulated years, he had seized the position first, thinking it was just a false alarm and that he could rest easy from then on.

Yet, that Ting You guy had actually found an alternative method to falsely hold a Golden Core position!

So, the young True Monarch had made his move.

With a single sword strike, he had severed all future trouble.

But what he hadn't expected was that in his later years of this lifetime, he would hear that name again!

"A lingering ghost..."

The young True Monarch exhaled deeply and began another calculation.

Soon, more relevant information emerged, ultimately locking onto a single name.

"...Lü Yang? Heaven initiates a killing will?"

At this thought, the young True Monarch raised his head and glanced toward the heavens, nodding slightly.

“In that case, I shall follow the will of Heaven and eliminate this hidden threat.”

In the next moment, he moved with a single thought.

Almost simultaneously, on 【Blood Demon Island】 , the jade sword at Ye Xingfeng’s waist shone brightly.

The young True Monarch’s manifested projection stepped out from it with hands behind his back!

Another True Monarch avatar!

And now, with the Dao Court Emperor, Sword Pavilion True Monarch, and the Innate Dao Calamity standing in a three-way confrontation, the entire 【Baoshou Mountain】 could no longer bear the strain and finally began to collapse.

Lü Yang’s figure appeared not far away.

Meanwhile, Guang Ming, who had entered the secret realm without taking or doing anything, now had his eyes filled with Buddhist light.

In the end, he had lost to his “self.”

Under the Buddhist light, the 【Treasure Vase Water Moon Bodhisattva】 of the Pure Land walked out, wearing a compassionate smile, as chanting resounded through Heaven and Earth.

At that moment, the void suddenly split open.

“Impudent!”

The next second, they saw Daoist Hong Yun, who had perfected his Foundation Establishment, step out with his hands behind his back, his aura overwhelming.

“Who dares... dares... dares...”

His voice gradually trailed off.

Suspended in the air, the Dao Court Emperor’s avatar, the Pure Land Bodhisattva’s avatar, the Sword Pavilion True Monarch’s avatar, and the Innate True Person Dao Calamity all simultaneously raised their heads and looked at Daoist Hong Yun.

“Who are you calling impudent!?”

Daoist Hong Yun stared blankly at the four of them.

“...Huh?”

Share to your friends

Tip: You can use left, right keyboard keys to browse between chapters.

[1,381 words]

Overseas, on a vast and boundless sea.

Three True Lord Avatars and a Dao Abomination stood there, their terrifying auras filling the void, causing heaven and earth to fall silent.

Even the sound of waves and wind had quieted down.

Drip, drip.

A drop of cold sweat slowly slid down Daoist Hong Yun's forehead.

This was rare for someone of his cultivation, as it meant the shock in his heart had reached a level where he could no longer perfectly control his own Dharma body.

Who am I? Where am I? What is happening?

These three questions were all that remained in Daoist Hong Yun's mind at this moment.

He had thought he was here to toy with weaklings in a fish pond, only to have four sharks emerge from it!

He admitted that his voice had indeed been a little too loud just now.

However, no matter what, Daoist Hong Yun had once been a True Lord.

So this moment of mental blankness lasted only an instant before he regained his composure.

".I, Daoist Hong Yun, greet all fellow Daoists."

Before the words had fully fallen, Daoist Hong Yun released his own aura.

Behind his head, a halo of light appeared, manifesting the magnificent scene of the 【 Treasure Blessed Land】 .

Seeing this, the previously hostile four gazes immediately softened considerably.

After all, having completed Foundation Establishment and refined a Blessed Land was already the peak combat power of a Foundation Establishment True Person.

Such strength was enough to battle a Dao Abomination of an Innate True Person.

Even when facing a True Lord Avatar, he at least had the right to speak.

Seeing this, Daoist Hong Yun let out a slight sigh of relief.

In the next moment, he quickly spoke to clear himself of involvement, "To be honest, this is a misunderstanding. I was implicated by karma and accidentally wandered into this place."

"True Lord! True Lord!"

Before Daoist Hong Yun could finish speaking, the Blood Demon True Person on the ground interrupted anxiously, "True Lord, didn't you come to save me? You can't just leave me behind!"

The moment he saw Daoist Hong Yun, the Blood Demon True Person realized something had gone wrong.

The True Lord had fallen from his position!?

His greatest backing had been Daoist Hong Yun.

But now, Daoist Hong Yun had fallen, which was almost equivalent to sentencing him to death!

How could he accept this?

Therefore, without any hesitation, he rushed to speak out first.

As long as Daoist Hong Yun cared about saving face, he could not possibly abandon him in front of everyone.

That being said, the Blood Demon True Person's face was still full of despair.

After all, deep down, he knew the truth.

In the next second, Daoist Hong Yun's face turned cold, and with a wave of his large sleeve, he sent the Blood Demon True Person flying, "Who are you? I do not know you."

—How could a True Person of the Sacred Sect care about saving face?

Moreover, the Blood Demon True Person had indeed gotten Daoist Hong Yun into a serious mess this time.

If the situation had allowed, Daoist Hong Yun would have cursed him out already.

Die somewhere else.

Stay away from me!

"So it's you, Hong Yun."

The three True Lord Avatars present naturally recognized their former companion.

Yet, they had no intention of making things difficult for him and instead chose to let him go.

After all, everyone knew about the internal struggle between True Person Chong Guang and Daoist Hong Yun within the Sacred Sect.

Such internal conflict was beneficial to all parties.

If they killed Daoist Hong Yun, it would actually help True Person Chong Guang.

Naturally, the True Lord Avatars here would not do something that strengthened their enemy.

As for the Innate True Person's Dao Abomination, it also recognized Daoist Hong Yun.

Back in the day, the Innate True Person's arrangements in the Biyang Cultivation World had been ruined by Daoist Hong Yun.

So their relationship was not bad, and they even shared a fairly deep connection.

Daoist Hong Yun had even tried to rescue it back then, though he had failed.

Seeing that no one was stopping him, Daoist Hong Yun finally relaxed completely.

"I have important matters to attend to, so I won't stay any longer."

As soon as he finished speaking, he stepped forward, intending to tear through the void and leave.

However, when his foot landed, he found himself still standing in the same place.

Nothing had happened.

"Hmm!?"

Almost simultaneously, the three True Lord Avatars and the Innate Dao Abomination sensed something was wrong.

All of them turned their gazes toward the culprit behind all of this.

In mid-air, Lü Yang sat there looking miserable.

【Mountain Embrace】 had been crushed by the overwhelming auras of the True Lord Avatars.

The resulting backlash had severely injured him in an instant.

Yet at this moment, there was no fear on his face.

On the contrary, he even seemed somewhat excited.

The baiting was over, time to reel it in.

"This has really... gotten out of hand!"

In Lü Yang's hand, a talisman glowed faintly.

To be honest, with such a big commotion—three True Lord Avatars, one Hong Yun, and even a Dao Abomination showing up—Lü Yang began to feel a subtle worry.

Could Clear Snow True Lord really handle this?

Primordial Saint Sect, Sacred Fire Cliff.

Inside the grand hall, True Person Chong Guang suddenly opened his eyes.

Before him was nothing but swirling snow and a peerless beauty standing quietly amidst it.

True Person Chong Guang quickly stood up, "Greetings, True Lord."

"No need for formalities," the woman in the snow replied calmly.

"My personal letter has been activated."

"After so long, this Lü Yang has indeed proven himself. He is not a coward."

That letter she had given Lü Yang was both a shield and a test.

If Lü Yang had immediately used it upon arriving overseas, without first trying to resolve the problem on his own, she would still have stepped in.

But her evaluation of him would have dropped.

After all, the Sacred Sect did not raise dependents who only knew how to seek help.

If one asked for assistance, they needed to offer enough benefits to show their worth.

The Sacred Sect did not keep idle people.

The worthless, once dead, were simply gone.

Thus, she was now rather satisfied with Lü Yang.

Because he had waited so long to activate the letter, it showed he had tried to handle things himself but lacked the capability to finish it.

"I shall go take a look."

True Person Chong Guang cupped his hands and spoke in a deep voice, "Yuan Tu carries heavy karmic burdens. The troubles he brings are not small. I must trouble True Lord this time."

"Heh."

True Lord Clear Snow shook her head, "You have not yet reached the True Lord realm, so you do not understand."

"To those of our level, Foundation Establishment is nothing but ants."

"No matter how heavy the karma or numerous the troubles, they are limited to Foundation Establishment."

"To me, they are not worth mentioning."

With those words, True Lord Clear Snow vanished from the hall.

The next moment, above the boundless sea.

As Lü Yang's talisman glowed in his hand, True Lord Clear Snow stepped out casually, glancing around.

And then she froze.

These people... looked awfully familiar.

"Shui Yue, Zheng De, Tian Wu?"

True Lord Clear Snow blinked her beautiful eyes.

Her gaze swept over the three True Lord Avatars one by one before finally settling on the sweat-drenched Daoist Hong Yun.

"Greetings, True Lord."

Only when Lü Yang's cautious voice reached her did True Lord Clear Snow turn around.

She looked at Lü Yang with a gaze she had never shown before.

And then, she laughed.

At first, it was a bell-like chuckle.

But soon, the laughter turned into wild, unrestrained laughter.

As the laughter echoed, goose-feather snow began to fall from the sky.

"No wonder Chong Guang praised you as the pillar of the Sacred Sect."

"You really did bring me a few huge troubles!"

Seeing this, Lü Yang bit his lip and quickly bowed, "Please forgive me, True Lord."

"Forgive you? No need!"

As soon as the words fell, True Lord Clear Snow grinned.

Between her red lips and white teeth was a dense savagery.

"On the contrary, I should thank you."

"From here on, this has nothing to do with you."

"Your karma, these big troubles, I'll take them."

Meanwhile, the three True Lord Avatars' expressions changed.

In the next moment, their avatars began to quickly dim.

Daoist Hong Yun and the Dao Abomination fled in panic.

"It's that madwoman from the Demon Sect!"

"Wait, did she come in person?"

"This is bad!"

But it was already too late.

In the next second, True Lord Clear Snow vanished from the spot.

Only a lingering voice echoed in all directions:

"Want to leave? All of you, stay!"

Share to your friends

Tip: You can use left, right keyboard keys to browse between chapters.

[1,382 words]

At this moment, the sky disappeared.

Lü Yang looked up at the sky, but he only saw the turbid clouds dispersing, with the sun, moon, and stars all dimming, leaving only an endless heavenly river stretching across the sky.

Starlight? Milky Way?

Lü Yang could not tell the difference.

He only saw that endless heavenly river slowly flowing past, touching the sky above, merging with the sea and sky as one, bowing over mountains and lowering the peaks beneath its flow.

The first to bear the brunt was the Dao Sin of the Innate True Person.

He did not even have time to react.

He only looked up at the sky, where the reflection of that endless heavenly river appeared in his eyes.

Then, the water of the heavenly river flowed out from his eyes, dissolving his flesh, muscles, and bones, melting his entire body inch by inch.

Without saying a word, Lü Yang stepped forward and grabbed hold.

Yet even so, that Dao Sin of the Innate remained motionless, standing there in a daze, his lips parting to let out a deep sigh:

"【Water Beneath the Stream】."

With that said, the Dao Sin of the Innate fell into deathly silence.

Even the 【Imperial Mansion Golden Seal of Doushuai True Decree】 lost its light, falling to the ground like an ordinary object.

Lü Yang naturally accepted all of it with a smile.

Immediately after, he looked around again, only to see that Ying Tongshou and Ye Xingfeng were still kneeling on the ground, completely motionless like the Dao Sin of the Innate.

Then a breeze blew, and their bones and flesh disintegrated.

"Whoosh, whoosh!"

Two Foundation Establishment mid-stage True Persons, one of whom had even refined his Sword Heart and Sword Intent into a peerless sword cultivator, were scattered into nothingness by a light breeze!

Next came a loud clang as Ying Tongshou's storage pouch and Ye Xingfeng's painstakingly refined life-bound flying sword both fell to the ground.

Seeing this, Lü Yang did not hesitate and immediately collected all of it.

Just then, from the edge of the four seas above the sky, another loud sound rang out, prompting him to look up.

He saw countless starlike flames falling from the sky.

Lü Yang opened his Dharma Eye, pushing the Heavenly Observatory at his brow to its limit.

The light of Bing Fire illuminated the world, allowing him to barely discern the sight of heaven and earth.

The sea surface was rising.

No, to be exact, a portion of the sea was rising, but how large it was, Lü Yang could not tell.

He only saw a clear misalignment appear on the distant sea horizon.

"A part of the sea is flying up?"

Lü Yang looked up and gazed far into the distance, piercing through thirty-six layers of Astral Clouds and layers of mist, barely making out a face obscured by fog.

"True Lord... Dharma Form!"

Lü Yang had seen it once during the Battle for the Dao, but back then he had not yet established his foundation, only watching from afar without the clarity he had now.

Then he saw that vast face slightly lower.

It looked at him.

No, it did not just look at him, but actually winked at him, revealing an expression of extreme joy.

However, as the one being winked at, Lü Yang only felt a sudden darkness before his eyes, unable to bear it.

He almost lost his soul on the spot, with blood tears streaming from his eyes.

He quickly lowered his head, not daring to look at that face in the sky again.

Yet with that fleeting glance, he already understood what had happened.

At this moment, nearly half of the outer sea had fallen into the palm of 【Clear Snow True Lord】 , held up as if she was lifting water with her hands!

Inland, near the direction of Jiangxi.

Hong Yun sped like lightning, supported by the 【Treasure Radiance Blessed Land】 , covering tens of thousands of miles in a single step, keeping pace with a hazy feminine figure.

"Amitabha."

The hazy figure revealed her appearance, with clear Buddhist light.

It was none other than 【Avalokiteshvara of the Water Moon in the Treasure Vase】 , possessing the body of Guang Ming, showing a rare angry expression:

"...Stop following me!"

Hong Yun Daoist did not dare to hesitate and immediately said:

"Bodhisattva, I am willing to join the Pure Land! I am also willing to merge my 【Treasure Radiance Blessed Land】 into the Pure Land!"

With his insight, Hong Yun Daoist could naturally see that the incarnation of 【Avalokiteshvara of the Water Moon in the Treasure Vase】 was fundamentally different from the other two True Lords' incarnations.

The other two had come on a whim, but 【Avalokiteshvara of the Water Moon】 had long premeditated this, investing the most power.

Thus, if he wanted to survive, he had to rely on her.

Hong Yun Daoist, even as a reincarnated Golden Core, though he had lost his position, still possessed his golden essence, making him of great use to the Pure Land.

In the past, he might have hesitated.

But now, with 【Clear Snow True Lord】 right before him, if he did not make a decision, death would be certain.

Survival was always better than death.

"You wish to enter my Pure Land?"

For a moment, 【Avalokiteshvara of the Water Moon】 truly wavered.

However, before she could respond, she felt a breeze blow past.

The breeze carried a trace of moisture, instantly transforming into icy coldness, as if a handful of mountain spring water had splashed onto her face.

She immediately felt her vision blur, as though she were in a dream, unable to distinguish up from down.

Faintly, she heard the sound of water dripping, and then she suddenly scattered into light.

"Boom!"

A brilliant light descended from the sky, like a great flood bursting through a dam, instantly shattering that incarnation into countless golden rays without the slightest resistance!

Jiangxi, within the Deep Joy Pure Land.

The 【Avalokiteshvara of the Water Moon】 , who had already stopped preaching, suddenly opened her eyes, her elegant brows furrowed tightly, finally losing her former composure.

"Crazy hag! Why did she target me first? I hadn't even agreed yet!"

For a moment, 【Avalokiteshvara of the Water Moon】 lost all serenity, revealing all the vulgarity of the mundane world, cursing like a street shrew.

After a long while, she suddenly snapped back to her senses.

"This is bad... my incarnation has been destroyed, and it's affecting my true self!"

The next second, she hurriedly gathered her Buddhist light, swiftly cutting off all distracting thoughts, silently reciting Buddhist scriptures, no longer daring to pay attention to the matters outside.

Meanwhile, back in the outer sea.

As the incarnation of 【Avalokiteshvara of the Water Moon】 shattered into light, Hong Yun Daoist stood there helplessly, letting out a long sigh.

In the next moment, the 【Treasure Radiance Blessed Land】 behind him visibly dimmed at a speed visible to the naked eye.

Cracks spread all over his body like a dense web, no matter how he channeled his power or performed his techniques, he could not mend it, and could only watch helplessly.

"Mid-stage... what suffering!"

Before his words fell, Hong Yun Daoist exploded on the spot.

His crumbling flesh transformed into streaks of firelight, each like a falling meteor plunging toward the sea.

Almost at the same time, two other streaks of firelight exploded in the sky.

The incarnation of the Dao Court's Son of Heaven, and the incarnation of the Sword Pavilion's True Lord.

In that instant, Lü Yang below saw countless star-like flames falling from the sky.

Yet before they could reach the sea, they were all extinguished by the endless heavenly river.

Only now did Lü Yang realize how unnecessary his previous worries had been.

Could 【Clear Snow True Lord】 not handle this little trouble?

She had even killed them all!

Ye Xingfeng, Blood Demon True Person, Ying Tongshou, Dao Sin of the Innate, Hong Yun Daoist, the incarnations of the True Lords— 【Clear Snow True Lord】 had slain them all indiscriminately!

At this moment, Lü Yang suddenly looked up, seeing that endless heavenly river slowly flowing.

Amid the waves of the heavenly river, a voice carried from south to north, from west to east, spreading into the Dao Court, the Pure Land, and even the Sword Pavilion.

It was not words, but an extremely excited burst of laughter:

"Ha ha ha ha!"

The laughter was fervent.

Below Foundation Establishment level, cultivators without enough status could not control themselves, and were forced to laugh along.

Almost at the same time, energies surged in all directions.

Seeing this, the laughter suddenly stopped, as if the warmth of summer had turned into the chill of winter, leaving only a cold and clear question:

"Who wishes to fight me?"

Share to your friends

Tip: You can use left, right keyboard keys to browse between chapters.

Chapter 196: Battle of True Lords, Corpses Covering a Million!

[1,505 words]

The voice of Clear Snow True Lord rode the boundless waves of the heavenly river and spread across the world.

For a moment, it brought silence to all directions of heaven and earth.

Who dared to fight her?

In that instant, countless True Lords felt a resonance.

One after another, they opened their eyes and looked toward the distant seas, their gazes carrying a hint of inquiry.

Did she truly want to battle?

Some True Lords, who enjoyed stirring up trouble, even felt faint anticipation.

After all, the world had been at peace for so long.

The last catastrophic tribulation had to be traced back to five thousand years ago!

Back then, in that great calamity, not just one True Lord had fallen.

The last to perish had been 【Heaven's Fortune Bright Light True Lord】 , who was now Daoist Hong Yun.

The 【Long Radiance Treasure Light Grotto-Heaven】 had collapsed with a thunderous roar.

Blood rain had fallen from the sky, all living beings had mourned together.

Such a scene had not been witnessed for many years.

Could they witness it again today?

“Amitabha!”

A Buddhist chant rang out.

The 【Bottle Moonlight Bodhisattva】 of the Pure Land was the first to withdraw their aura, completely ignoring the provocation of Clear Snow True Lord.

The other True Lords were not surprised at this sight.

After all, the Bodhisattvas of the Pure Land were known to be dominant in their own land but rather weak when outside.

Choosing to admit defeat was understandable.

Similarly, the Celestial Son of Dao Court was the second to withdraw their aura.

In an instant, all the True Lords' gazes fell on Jiangnan.

They landed on that young True Lord on the Extreme Heaven Cliff of the Sword Pavilion, whose lips were red and teeth white, a sword resting on his knees.

The young True Lord remained silent.

He lowered his eyelids and glanced at the long sword resting on his knees.

It was his natal flying sword, with which he had fought his way to the peak of Foundation Establishment.

However, ever since achieving Golden Core, this sword had never been drawn again.

Even when he had destroyed the Witch Ghost Path, he had merely unleashed a sword Qi without truly drawing his sword.

Now, after a thousand years had passed, could this sword still be drawn?

Was it still sharp?

Did he still possess his former sword heart?

“. Hehe.”

The young True Lord suddenly raised his head, seemingly locking eyes with Clear Snow True Lord far across the seas.

Then he suddenly laughed and said, “You’re stirring my heart?”

“Xue Feihong, do you really want to battle me?”

Clear Snow True Lord responded simply and directly, “You really don’t seem like a sword cultivator. You’re far too indecisive. Do you want to follow in Hong Yun’s footsteps?”

“Come out and fight, and you might still have a chance.”

As her voice fell, the young True Lord once again fell silent.

He turned to glance at the Foundation Establishment cultivators behind him.

Then he closed his eyes and fell into contemplation.

At this moment, he thought of another person.

“Ting You.”

He truly didn't seem like a sword cultivator.

If he had been a true sword cultivator, he wouldn't have fought Ting You over the Gold Seal in the past, but would have directly battled Ting You to the death.

“. Enough, I must strive for the next life at least.”

The young True Lord opened his eyes, his resolve already made.

In the next moment, this 【Chengtian Zhengde True Lord】 vanished from the Extreme Heaven Cliff where he had sat for a hundred years.

In the sky, a celestial star suddenly flared brightly!

Seeing this, Clear Snow True Lord also laughed heartily toward the sky.

“Good! You've come well!”

As her voice fell, Clear Snow True Lord also disappeared.

At this point, the two of them actually withdrew their towering Dharma Bodies, leaving only their respective fruit positions manifested.

In the next moment, the sun dimmed, the moon sank, and all stars darkened.

Only the two stars representing their fruit positions shone with dazzling heavenly light.

At the same time, strange phenomena arose in both Jiangbei and Jiangnan.

Snow fell heavily, floodwaters surged through the mountains, and buildings and fortifications across various regions were struck.

Some structures collapsed, while others still stood firm.

This was not a natural disaster, but man-made calamity.

It was caused by the battle between the two True Lords, which triggered a response from heaven and earth, resulting in these abnormal scenes.

This was still limited to the mortal world.

At this moment, all Dao Foundation techniques related to 【Wall Soil】 and 【Understream Water】 across the land also showed the same reaction.

Cultivators who practiced these corresponding techniques suddenly felt a strong sense of hatred toward each other, along with a strange hunger.

Kill him! Eat him!

Their instincts told them that as long as they killed the opposing cultivator, their own cultivation would skyrocket instantly.

This was the blessing of the fruit position, their destined opportunity!

In an instant, the land was stained with blood.

Except for the Sky-reaching Sea of Clouds of the Saint Sect, the Path Ascending Abyss of the Sword Pavilion, and a few major powers guarded by True Lords, chaos erupted across the land!

Cultivators practicing 【Understream Water】 and those practicing 【Wall Soil】 could not control their murderous urges.

Even if they were of the same clan, friends, or even husband and wife, they turned on each other at this moment, fighting to the death without regard for life.

Only Foundation Establishment cultivators could barely maintain some clarity.

When True Lords battle, corpses cover a million, and the world mourns in white!

Overseas, Lü Yang raised his head in confusion.

If he had barely been able to follow Clear Snow True Lord's movements when she slew everyone in one breath, now he was completely unable to see anything.

It wasn't until a voice called out that he snapped out of his daze.

Lü Yang reluctantly withdrew his gaze and saw that at some point, Ancestor Ting You had appeared beside him.

A few more pleased smiles appeared on his face.

“Zhengde... that old fool from the Sword Pavilion has fallen into disadvantage.”

Curious, Lü Yang asked, “Ancestor, can you see their battle?”

“I can't see it.”

Ancestor Ting You shook his head.

“It’s just that in my life, I cultivated 【Wall Soil】 to the peak of Foundation Establishment. Even in death, I still retain some sense of it.”

“I can clearly feel my strength weakening. This has nothing to do with my state, but because the master of 【Wall Soil】 has fallen into disadvantage. The fruit position is transferring the pressure onto the Foundation Establishment cultivators below, causing our Dao Foundations and divine abilities to weaken.”

“But it’s still early.”

Saying this, Ancestor Ting You shook his head again.

“These are just the aftershocks of the True Lords’ battle. Truly determining victory or defeat will still take some time.”

After finishing, he glanced at Lü Yang again and shook his head.

“Too bad you don’t cultivate 【Wall Soil】 .”

“Otherwise, if you killed a few Foundation Establishment cultivators practicing 【Understream Water】 right now, the fruit position might favor you immediately, and you’d have great hope of breaking through your current realm.”

“But if that happened, 【Wall Soil】 might reverse the disadvantage and suppress 【Understream Water】 instead.”

“Although such a shift in fruit position only brings a slight improvement to a True Lord, in a life-and-death struggle, it might just be the straw that breaks the camel’s back.”

“I see.”

Upon hearing this, Lü Yang suddenly gained enlightenment.

So Foundation Establishment cultivators actually played such a role for Golden Core True Lords!

No wonder they nurtured Foundation Establishment cultivators!

He had long harbored this doubt.

Since there were only thirty fruit positions in the world, why didn’t the Golden Core True Lords simply wipe out all Foundation Establishment cultivators related to their own fruit positions?

Wouldn't that eliminate all competition?

Otherwise, like Hong Yun, who fell from the fruit position and was suppressed by True Person Chong Guang, it must have been unbearably humiliating—truly the shame of a Golden Core True Lord.

Now it seemed there was indeed another reason.

No wonder breaking through Foundation Establishment was considered becoming a “true person,” because Foundation Establishment cultivators could influence the struggle of True Lords to some extent!

However, this alone didn't seem to fully explain it.

“Although it can influence the True Lords' battle, can't they just avoid fighting altogether? There must be a deeper reason, one that concerns the very heart of a True Lord's cultivation...”

Thinking of this, Lü Yang dared not delve further.

Compared to that, the spoils of scavenging corpses were far more delightful to Lü Yang.

One storage bag was stuffed with treasures.

A sweep with his divine sense revealed four superior-grade spirit treasures!

“Indeed, murder and arson bring gold belts!”

How rare were superior-grade spirit treasures in normal times?

Mystical and naturally formed, they could grant a Foundation Establishment cultivator an extra innate divine ability, giving them a decisive advantage in combat.

Before today, he had only 【Heaven-Seeking Instrument】 and 【Abhijna Sword】 as superior-grade treasures.

After today, he had four more!

The wealthiest was Ye Xingfeng.

Aside from his natal flying sword 【Galaxy Sword Pill】 , he had two other superior-grade spirit treasures on him.

Ying Tongshou had slightly less, but he still provided one superior-grade spirit treasure.

Of course, they all now belonged to him.

Not to mention the half-True Treasure left behind by the death of Innate Dao Sin— 【Imperial Mansion Golden Seal Doushuai True Edict】 !

This round of scavenging was truly a huge harvest!

Share to your friends

Tip: You can use left, right keyboard keys to browse between chapters.

[1,380 words]

Overseas, Lü Yang was in no hurry to leave.

Instead, he carefully counted his harvest.

First was Ye Xingfeng's life-bound flying sword.

“Such a pity that it was damaged by a True Lord, the impact was too great, and the three divine wonders on the sword — 【Breaking Barriers】 , 【Dispelling Thoughts】 , and 【God-Slaying】 — had actually been reduced to only one 【Breaking Barriers】 .”

Strictly speaking, the quality of this life-bound flying sword was even higher than the 【Abi Sword】 .

After all, all three divine wonders were designed for killing.

No wonder Ye Xingfeng was the direct personal disciple of a Golden Core True Lord.

To refine such a spirit treasure, the hand of a True Lord from the Sword Pavilion was surely involved.

In comparison, Ye Xingfeng's other two spirit treasures were much weaker.

One was the robe he wore, a brocade cloak, with threads flowing with a faint treasure light, clearly a body-protecting treasure that was impervious to water and fire.

“ 【Hundred Calamities Protective Mystic Cloak】 !”

The divine wonder of this superior spirit treasure was called 【Hundred Calamities】 .

As the name suggested, the cloak contained a hundred disaster-warding talismans, and each attack could only eliminate one of them.

No matter how high your skill or how powerful your divine ability, one strike could only erase one talisman.

If the attack paused, the spirit treasure could regenerate the talisman.

Only by attacking a hundred times in quick succession, each time hitting the true body, could one break through the protection of this spirit treasure robe.

It was well known that sword cultivators had strong offense but weak defense.

And this robe was obviously meant to make up for that flaw.

With Ye Xingfeng wearing it and using his life-bound flying sword, no wonder he was invincible in the mid-Foundation Establishment Realm.

“Pity, it’s useless now!”

“No matter how strong the combat power, no matter how good the fight, it’s still just mid-Foundation Establishment. A True Lord could kill him with a wave of the sleeve, and even a late-Foundation Establishment Grandmaster could easily slay him.”

Lü Yang sighed emotionally.

In the end, realm was what truly mattered!

Next, Lü Yang picked up another spirit treasure, which turned out to be a small tower.

It had six levels, appeared to be made of white jade, and a treasure bead sat atop its peak.

“ **【Serene Peace and Clear Aura Treasure Tower】** !”

This superior spirit treasure was not a weapon for combat, but a tool for cultivation.

Its divine wonder was called **【Clear Aura】** , capable of purifying spiritual energy to nourish the Dao Foundation of a True Person.

If placed within the Dao Foundation, it could also reinforce the foundation and reduce the erosion from the **【Bixi Wind】** , granting a Foundation Establishment True Person thirty extra years of lifespan.

If any spirit treasures or materials were contaminated by turbid energy, they could be placed in the tower to be purified and restored to clarity.

Finally came Ying Tongshou’s superior spirit treasure.

It was called 【Purple Star Official's Supreme Gold Seal】 , which he had refined using the 【Official Position】 of the Dao Court.

Its divine wonder was called 【Pacify Rebels】 , mainly used for suppression and collection.

Any metallic objects within its suppression range could be subdued and gathered by this treasure seal.

Moreover, Lü Yang could use this spirit treasure to claim the subdued spirit treasures as his own, and even control them to attack their original owners.

“This is another fine treasure!”

With a flick of his finger, Lü Yang instantly refined the three spirit treasures.

In a blink, the 【Hundred Calamities Protective Mystic Cloak】 draped over his body.

The 【Serene Peace and Clear Aura Treasure Tower】 anchored his Dao Foundation.

The 【Purple Star Official's Supreme Gold Seal】 hung at his waist.

Standing there, he immediately radiated overwhelming treasure light!

Seeing this, Lü Yang quickly operated 【Mountain Embrace】 to suppress himself, retracting all the radiance of the spirit treasures, returning to his usual low-profile demeanor.

“However, speaking of value, the most precious one is still this.”

With a thought, Lü Yang produced a talisman in his hand.

Its material was neither metal nor jade, its symbols shaped like tadpoles forming images of cloud dragons and strange birds.

When activated with magical power, it emitted golden radiance, a sight of infinite grandeur.

【Imperial Mansion Golden Seal Dou Shuai True Decree】 !

The true treasure left by Daoist Hong Yun overseas, refined with the entire Biyang Cultivation Realm, though it had not been completed before Daoist Hong Yun perished.

Looking back now, Daoist Hong Yun had laid out such an arrangement in the Biyang Cultivation Realm, quietly restoring his cultivation to the peak of Foundation Establishment.

He clearly had great ambitions, waiting for True Person Chong Guang to begin his ascension to seek gold, so he could strike hard.

What a pity that it was accidentally ruined by Lü Yang himself.

Thinking of this, Lü Yang pondered the 【Imperial Mansion Golden Seal Dou Shuai True Decree】 in his hand.

After a moment, Lü Yang opened his palm and saw the talisman, a near-true treasure, constantly transforming in his hand, eventually turning into a mysterious light.

“Amazing...”

Wherever the mysterious light passed, all phenomena dimmed, causality vanished, and even divine senses fell into ignorance, unable to calculate or perceive anything within the light.

“This is... 【Star Concealing Radiance】 ?”

The second innate divine ability corresponding to the 【Wall Soil】 Dao Foundation!

This innate divine ability was born from the combination of 【She Ti Ge】 Qi and 【Qiang Yu】 at the position of Earth Fiend.

【She Ti Ge】 , also known as "Yin," resided where three Yang energies converged, where Yang fire arose and Yin fire receded.

As the sun rose, the stars concealed themselves, making even clear causality hard to reveal.

It corresponded to the profound wonder 【Settling Doubt】 in Lü Yang’s life-bound divine abilities.

【Settling Doubt】 could anchor the development of events toward the desired outcome.

While 【Star Concealing Radiance】 could completely cover up the resulting causal changes.

If used well, it could even simulate a “Heaven and Earth Killing Intent” effect!

In addition, 【Star Concealing Radiance】 could conceal others' perception of danger and hide Lü Yang's own whereabouts, making it equally formidable for assassinations.

“Incredible!” Lü Yang marveled.

The 【Imperial Mansion Golden Seal Dou Shuai True Decree】 could actually simulate the next required innate divine ability in advance for a cultivator, and it could be used as smoothly as one's own limb!

This kind of transformation was not yet obvious at the mid-Foundation Establishment stage, when there was only one innate divine ability.

Because mid-Foundation Establishment encompassed two innate divine abilities, its use for those at mid-stage perfection or even late-stage Foundation Establishment True Persons was unimaginable.

It was almost equivalent to directly increasing one's cultivation!

With this near-true treasure, mid-Foundation Establishment perfection could immediately transform into a late-Foundation Establishment Grandmaster.

And a late-Foundation Establishment Grandmaster could immediately transform into Foundation Establishment perfection!

“Then... what about Foundation Establishment perfection?”

The more Lü Yang thought about it, the more shocked he felt.

In the end, he couldn't help but burst out laughing:

‘Daoist Hong Yun, you died well!’

‘Although you once stole my harvest in my fifth lifetime, I am kind-hearted and magnanimous. I will forgive you in this lifetime.’

After all, the dead deserved respect!

If he had these spirit treasures back when he faced Arhat Fulong, why would he have needed to struggle?

He would have beaten him until even his dog-brain splattered!

He might have even had the confidence to fight the Peak Master of Mending Heaven Peak!

Thinking of this, Lü Yang let out a long breath, feeling that all his meticulous planning had finally paid off:

“It was not in vain that I went through so much trouble.”

And this was just the harvest of “this lifetime.”

In addition, there was still something concerning his future Dao path, namely the harvest of the “next lifetime,” the Dao Sin left behind by the failed Golden Seeking Innate True Person!

“Pity that its level is too high, and I can’t perform a soul search...”

At this moment, the Dao Sin had already been stored by Lü Yang in the Ten Thousand Spirits Banner.

Compared to before, this Dao Sin seemed to have had its wonders extracted by True Lord Qing Cheng Feixue.

It had fallen into deathly silence, and its aura had dropped to the early Foundation Establishment level.

No longer possessing its former transcendence.

“It was formed after the death of an Innate Daoist, so it must know the details of Supreme Grade True Qi. I have to find a way to extract that knowledge later.”

While Lü Yang was thinking about how to deal with this Dao Sin.

Suddenly, a loud noise exploded in his ears, deafening and almost shaking his very soul, even causing his Dao Foundation to violently tremble.

“What’s going on!?”

Lü Yang raised his head to look at the sky.

He saw that above the firmament, the two position stars formed by 【Wall Soil】 and 【Stream Water】 had finally dimmed like a flickering candle flame!

Share to your friends

Tip: You can use left, right keyboard keys to browse between chapters.

Chapter 198: Collapse of the Paradise, the Fruit Position Left Vacant!

[1,517 words]

At this moment, it was not only Lü Yang who sensed it.

All the mortals, Qi Refining cultivators, and even Foundation Establishment Real Persons across the world also felt it and looked toward the sky above their heads.

Immediately after, a wave of sorrow suddenly overwhelmed everyone's hearts.

Mortals almost uncontrollably burst into loud wails.

Qi Refining cultivators couldn't help but shed tears.

Only Foundation Establishment Real Persons merely felt a sting in their eyes.

Right after, they saw the entire sky turning crimson.

The rain fell with a loud patter.

Every drop was crystal clear.

Before hitting the ground, it was a torrential downpour.

After hitting the ground, it transformed into rolling red jade stones, merging into the earth veins, merging into the Qi, merging into all things of this heaven and earth.

Heaven and earth wept blood, all things mourned together!

Patriarch Ting You couldn't help but sigh when he saw this scene: "A Golden Core True Lord has fallen, the fruit position responds, even heaven and earth are mourning the fall of the True Lord."

However, Lü Yang didn't think so.

"Something's wrong."

As a Real Person of the Primordial Saint Sect, he had always been unrestrained in considering the worst possibilities.

Lü Yang glanced around.

After the blood rain fell and merged into the world, it didn't cause any damage to heaven and earth.

On the contrary, it was greatly beneficial.

In other words, this blood rain after the fall of the Golden Core True Lord was actually a good thing for heaven and earth.

Heaven and earth mourning the death of a Golden Core True Lord?

Could it be just for show?

Despite this thought, Lü Yang didn't dare to voice his guess.

After all, what if he provoked heavenly punishment?

Disaster comes from careless words, after all.

At that moment, another loud boom echoed.

But this time, it was not in the present world.

Neither mortals nor Qi Refining cultivators felt it.

Only Foundation Establishment Real Persons could perceive it.

Lü Yang immediately entered the Foundation Establishment Realm.

Looking up, he saw a region of the Foundation Establishment Realm collapsing on a massive scale!

"What is... this?"

The sky was falling!

Lü Yang stared dumbfounded at the collapsing region, only to realize that it wasn't the Foundation Establishment Realm itself collapsing, but rather something above it.

The environment of the Foundation Establishment Realm was extremely special.

It had a clear upper and lower boundary.

Below was like a dim sea, where 【Bifeng】 blew endlessly all year round.

Above was vast and ethereal, with no visible end.

However, now, the collapsing area revealed a “boundary.”

At that boundary, countless splendid lights mixed with auspicious Qi slowly fell toward the Foundation Establishment Realm.

This gave Lü Yang an extremely familiar feeling.

It was just like——

“Heaven Collapse?”

Beside him, Patriarch Ting You also showed the same confusion, which made Lü Yang suddenly realize: “That’s right! It’s exactly like Heaven Collapse! This feeling is exactly the same as Heaven Collapse!”

Heaven Collapse was a technique he had learned from Patriarch Ting You back when he was still in the Qi Refining stage.

First ascending to the Foundation Establishment Realm, then voluntarily falling back down, thereby unleashing terrifying destructive power.

And now, the countless splendid lights falling from the sky felt exactly the same as when Heaven Collapse happened!

Something was falling!

Lü Yang strained his eyes to look.

Within the myriad splendid lights, he saw jade towers and palaces.

He saw mountains, rivers, the sun, and the moon.

But he also saw a vast sea of corpses and blood.

Such a scene reminded him of the small worlds seized by various True Lords during the battle for Dao.

“What exactly is that?” Lü Yang couldn’t help but murmur softly.

In the next second, a response sounded in his ear:

“That is a Paradise.”

The speaker intoned solemnly: “The 【Chengtian Zhengde True Lord】 has fallen, his soul has entered reincarnation, and the 【Yuqie Bao Gui Paradise】 has fallen, leaving the fruit position vacant.”

At this moment, Lü Yang felt his hands and feet turn cold.

However, upon recognizing the speaker's voice, his tense body relaxed all of a sudden.

He turned back helplessly and asked, "Martial Uncle, are you doing this on purpose?"

"Hahaha."

True Person Chong Guang laughed heartily: "Scared you, didn't I?"

"No."

Lü Yang stubbornly denied, then turned to continue looking at the collapsing myriad splendid lights, sighing: "So that Sword Pavilion True Lord has already fallen?"

"As if it were that easy."

True Person Chong Guang shook his head: "A Golden Core True Lord, refining gold nature to ascend to a blessed land, transforming a Paradise to attain the true fruit. The collapse of the Paradise is only the first step of falling."

"Just like that Hong Yun, after the Paradise collapses, a wisp of gold nature guards his reincarnation. Although the soul doesn't perish and is forever unaffected by the mystery of the womb, he also loses the power of a True Lord and cannot immediately reclaim the fruit position after reincarnation. He can only wait endlessly for a chance to return."

"Of course, he wasn't going to live much longer in this life anyway."

Lü Yang sighed upon hearing this: "So he chose to leave Sword Pavilion and engage in a life-and-death battle with True Lord Feixue because he didn't want to die on his bed?"

"Is that what you think?"

True Person Chong Guang glanced at Lü Yang with a strange expression: "Looks like you still don't quite understand those sword-wielding lunatics from the south."

"In the end, he was seeking karma."

Saying this, True Person Chong Guang also glanced at Patriarch Ting You beside him and said, "After all, this 【Chengtian Zhengde True Lord】 didn't have great talent."

"A thousand years have passed, and he was still in the early Golden Core stage."

"In this case, even if he didn't fight and chose to hide, he still wouldn't have been able to support the 【Yuqie Bao Gui Paradise】 after death. The result wouldn't have been any different."

“So he took the initiative to fight, hoping to cripple True Lord Feixue by sacrificing his Paradise and himself, thereby exchanging for a share of karma from the other True Lords of Sword Pavilion, giving himself a chance to be guided back in the future and reclaim his fruit position.”

“I reckon that’s his true intention!”

True Person Chong Guang’s evaluation was merciless.

“The Jiangnan region emphasizes karma, nine out of ten disciples there are reincarnations. Just wait, in a few years Sword Pavilion will produce an unparalleled genius.”

At this moment, a bell-like laugh suddenly rang out:

“With just that, he wanted to hurt me?”

As the voice fell, Lü Yang subconsciously turned his head.

What entered his eyes was a pair of autumn-water-like pupils, still tinged with traces of crimson.

“Using self-destruction of the Paradise just to escape from my hands, carrying a sliver of gold nature along with his soul into reincarnation.”

“Before he left, I even took a bite and devoured a third of his gold nature. He won’t be reincarnating for another thirty to fifty years.”

“As expected, the gold nature of an in-position True Lord tastes the best!”

After finishing, the newcomer even stuck out her tongue and licked her lips with a look of deep satisfaction.

It was the Clear Snow True Lord, Feixue!

This True Lord, who was known to outsiders as the “Crazy Lady,” appeared serene and elegant as long as she restrained her initial madness, looking just like a refined noble lady.

“True Lord, these are the treasures I gathered for you.”

Lü Yang didn’t hesitate at all.

He directly presented all the spiritual treasures he had just looted, including the 【Imperial Palace Golden Seal Doushuai True Decree】 .

“Hehe.”

Clear Snow True Lord covered her mouth and chuckled, then waved her hand cheerfully: “Keep them for yourself. You don’t need to report such trivial matters to me in the future.”

“This time, I’ve taken on all the karmic ties for you. Whether it’s the Pure Land or the Dao Court, as long as I don’t speak out, they shouldn’t trouble you before you reach the late Foundation Establishment stage.”

“Thank you, True Lord!”

Only then did Lü Yang put away the storage pouch, feeling relieved in his heart, though he didn’t take Clear Snow True Lord’s courteous words seriously.

This time, he had offered them willingly, so she said that to appear magnanimous.

But if he hadn’t offered them, she probably would have shown a different attitude.

After all, she could choose not to accept the things, but he couldn’t choose not to offer them!

Once the offering was made, she could return them again.

If he didn’t offer them, it would be a question of absolute loyalty, and the iron fist of the Saint Sect would inevitably come crashing down.

Right after, Clear Snow True Lord turned around and looked at True Person Chong Guang:

“Chong Guang, Hong Yun has already been killed by me.”

“He didn’t expect that I had already broken through to mid-Golden Core stage.”

“Without the protection of the Paradise, a mere wisp of gold nature was not enough for him to reincarnate and escape from my hands.”

“Everything is ready. Prepare for the enthronement.”

After saying this, Clear Snow True Lord disappeared on the spot.

On the other side, True Person Chong Guang, who had always been calm and steady, finally showed an expression of indescribable excitement.

He immediately turned to Lü Yang and said:

“Yuan Tu, return to the Sea of Clouds at once and come with Yinshan to meet me at Sacred Fire Cliff.”

“I have a great task to entrust to you.”

Share to your friends

Tip: You can use left, right keyboard keys to browse between chapters.

[1,543 words]

Sky-reaching Sea of Clouds, Sacred Fire Cliff.

Up to this day, very few in the Primordial Saint Sect knew what had really happened.

They only thought that their own True Lord had gone mad, which was why he came out to fight with the True Lord from the Sword Pavilion.

The only ones who truly understood the situation were the Grand True Persons at the peak of Foundation Establishment.

For example, Hong Ju.

“Pu!!!”

Inside a quiet chamber, Hong Ju suddenly spat out a mouthful of blood, feeling a mysterious power rooted in his bloodline dissipating at a speed visible to the naked eye.

“Impossible!?”

Hong Ju stared blankly at the blood he had just coughed up.

There should have been a faint golden hue in the blood, yet now it had turned into a glaring crimson.

“True Lord... is dead?” Hong Ju was utterly bewildered.

He was Hong Yun Daoist, or rather, in the past, when the 【True Lord of Heavenly Fortune and Bright Radiance】 had still held his position, he had been created through the refinement of his own blood essence, molded and cultivated to finally achieve the peak of Foundation Establishment as a Grand True Person.

Thus, there had always been a trace of golden essence lingering in his bloodline.

But now, that golden essence had vanished!

For such a thing to happen, there was only one possibility — the source of that golden essence, 【True Lord of Heavenly Fortune and Bright Radiance】 , Hong Yun Daoist, had perished with both soul and spirit scattered!

But how could this be possible?

How hard was it to kill a True Lord?

With their souls protected by golden essence, even if they fell from their position, they could easily escape through reincarnation, slipping away from the hands of other True Lords.

Unless the two sides were not on the same level.

But how could that be?

As far as he knew, the mid-stage and late-stage Gold Core True Lords in the Saint Sect had no enmity with his True Lord.

Moreover, for Gold Core True Lords, companions of the same path were extremely important.

Even when True Person Chong Guang had tried to compete with Hong Yun Daoist for the position, most of the other True Lords had only stood by and watched, not daring to intervene directly.

Except...

‘Xue Feihong!’

Hong Ju did not dare to speak this name out loud.

After all, this was Sacred Fire Cliff.

If he said it aloud, Clear Snow True Lord would definitely sense it.

However, he was already certain of his suspicion.

There was only this one possibility — Xue Feihong, that wretched woman!

Once just a junior True Lord, after her last reincarnation and regaining her position, her cultivation had advanced by leaps and bounds.

Now, within just a few hundred years, she had already broken through to the mid-stage!

It was simply unbelievable!

At the mid-stage Gold Core level, with a permanently stabilized cave heaven, there would be no risk of its collapse unless a Nascent Soul Dao Lord took action.

Reclaiming the position after reincarnation would also be greatly accelerated.

It sounded simple.

But in reality, how many True Lords had gone through countless cycles of reincarnation, spending thousands or even tens of thousands of years without breaking through to the mid-stage, always facing the danger of cave heaven collapse.

This step was not so easily taken.

‘That wretched woman! She must have used some underhanded means!’

Hong Ju suddenly stopped the furious roar in his heart.

Because at some point, the quiet chamber where he was meditating had already begun to show traces of water, and yin energy was rising.

This was heaven and earth responding to the resentment in his heart.

“Ugh!”

In the next moment, Hong Ju suddenly vomited a mouthful of water.

The spring water was cool, seemingly manifesting out of thin air, churning his internal organs into complete chaos.

“Cough cough cough!”

Hong Ju coughed while hastily circulating his divine powers, severing the karmic ties.

Then, he quickly took out the **【Talisman of Shared Fate and Altered Fortune】** and began writing rapidly:

【I have never harbored any great disrespectful thoughts!】

As the words settled, another wave of meritorious fortune flowed into the talisman, finally stopping Hong Ju’s vomiting and halting the disintegration of his dharma body.

“I must not hate. I must smile...”

At the mid-stage Gold Core level, things had already changed drastically!

With the cave heaven stabilized and the position blessed, the connection to heaven and earth had become unbelievably close.

Even the fleeting thoughts of mortals would receive a response!

Hong Ju let out a bitter laugh.

Of course, it was not for Hong Yun Daoist that he laughed bitterly.

As a True Person of the Saint Sect, the only thing that could make him despair and laugh bitterly was his own fate.

“I am a being formed from the blood essence of a True Lord, my entire path tied to the True Lord.

Even though I have reached the peak of Foundation Establishment, I have no chance of ascending to a position.

Now that the True Lord is dead, I have little time left.

In just a few short years, my dharma body will collapse, and I will follow the True Lord in death... I don't even have a soul!”

Without a soul, there would be no reincarnation!

If Hong Yun Daoist had still been alive, the connection through golden essence would have kept his lifespan worry-free.

But now, at most, he could only struggle to survive for another two or three years!

How could he possibly accept this?

Thinking of this, Hong Ju began calculating again, his fingers almost striking sparks as he desperately tried to find the culprit behind Hong Yun Daoist's fall!

A moment later.

“...”

Hong Ju fell silent.

On his chiseled face was an expression full of confusion, his fingers nearly rubbed raw.

“How could this be... no, no, no... this isn't right, right?”

No matter how he calculated.

It all pointed to him being the one who killed Hong Yun Daoist!

It had to be a miscalculation!

“The inherently evil Chong Guang and Yuan Tu... it must be them who obscured the heavenly secrets and karma, preventing me from finding the truth.

I share an irreconcilable enmity with them!”

Hong Ju lowered his hand, his eyes full of hatred yet helplessness.

He knew very well that the only reason he had not yet been slapped to death was purely because he still had some value.

After all, as a Grand True Person at the peak of Foundation Establishment, the True Lords of the Saint Sect still wanted him to die on the battlefield.

Almost at the same time, a stream of light flew into the hall.

Hong Ju looked over dispiritedly and saw the spiritual light unfold into a handwritten note with only one line:

Help me ascend, and I will grant you a lifetime of glory.

“.Chong Guang?”

Hong Ju was stunned for a moment upon seeing this, then suddenly sat upright.

“That’s right, if he ascends and takes charge of the 【Overturning Lamp Flame】 , perhaps he could also preserve my life...”

At this thought, Hong Ju instantly felt as if the sky had cleared.

Inside another hall on Sacred Fire Cliff.

True Person Chong Guang sat at the head seat, while True Person Yinshan stood by his side.

At that moment, True Person Chong Guang suddenly opened his eyes as if he had received some kind of reply.

His eyes narrowed slightly, showing a hint of satisfaction.

The current situation was far better than he had expected!

With Hong Yun's death, his biggest obstacle had been removed, allowing him to lay out his plans with even greater ease.

His hope of ascending had increased several times over!

Thus, when divine light flickered in the hall and Lü Yang emerged from within, True Person Chong Guang immediately burst into laughter.

He took the initiative to step down from his seat and warmly approached Lü Yang, patting him on the shoulder.

"This time, you've worked hard, Yuan Tu."

"For the sake of Uncle-Master, it is not hard at all."

Lü Yang shook his head and said earnestly, "Uncle-Master mentioned before that there was a great task to entrust to me.

I wonder what it might be?

As long as it is within my power, I will not hesitate to give my life a thousand times over!"

See, this was what true loyalty looked like.

How reliable!

True Person Chong Guang was not the least bit annoyed at being interrupted by Lü Yang.

On the contrary, his smile grew even broader.

"In that case, I won't be courteous with you, Yuan Tu."

With that, the three of them sat down facing each other.

"Speaking of which, I haven't yet discussed this with you, Yuan Tu."

Chong Guang spoke casually.

"Yuan Tu, you probably don't yet know how to ascend and seek the golden fruit, do you?"

Lü Yang's heart stirred upon hearing this.

Finally, the real content was coming!

As for seeking the golden fruit, he was not entirely ignorant.

After all, there was still the Ancestor Ting You inside the Myriad Spirits Banner.

However, Ancestor Ting You was considered a rogue practitioner.

Or rather, except for the four major powers of the east, south, west, and north, all other sects were considered rogue paths.

The difference was merely in who was more rogue and who was less so.

For example, some sects with long-standing legacies also had True Lords overseeing them.

Such sects could barely be considered respectable in the eyes of the Saint Sect, but only just.

Compared to them, as the direct descendant True Person of the Saint Sect, Chong Guang undoubtedly had a more systematic and precise understanding of how to ascend and seek the golden fruit.

Thus, Lü Yang immediately straightened his posture and cupped his hands, saying, "Please instruct me, Uncle-Master."

Share to your friends

Tip: You can use left, right keyboard keys to browse between chapters.

Chapter 200: Reincarnating to Seek True Attainment

[1,584 words]

"The so-called ascension to seek gold has different interpretations among various factions, but to sum it up in one sentence: refine the golden nature to ascend the blessed land, transform the grotto-heaven to obtain true attainment."

True Person Chong Guang spoke with a smile, explaining eloquently:

"The so-called **【Blessed Land】** refers to something transformed by a grand True Person who has achieved Foundation Establishment Perfection, using their own life essence as the foundation and supplementing it with innate divine abilities to expand their Dao foundation."

"When the 【Blessed Land】 soars, it becomes a 【Grotto-Heaven】 ."

"And only the 【Grotto-Heaven】 can align with the position of Heaven and Earth."

"As for how to transform the 【Blessed Land】 into a 【Grotto-Heaven】 , the key lies in the golden nature."

"The golden nature is the essence of the soul."

"A grand True Person who has achieved Foundation Establishment Perfection must extract the indestructible golden nature from their own soul to propel the 【Blessed Land】 and transform it into a 【Grotto-Heaven】 ."

Speaking of this, True Person Chong Guang glanced at Lü Yang again and smiled, saying:

"If the attempt to seek gold fails, and the 【Blessed Land】 cannot withstand the Dao transformation brought by the fruit position, it will merge with the golden nature, giving rise to a Dao Calamity."

"The Dao Calamity inherits all the knowledge of the original body, and its strength might even surpass Foundation Establishment Perfection by one level."

"However, the Dao Calamity is ultimately not a cultivator."

"Its existence itself defies common sense, and it delights in devouring cultivators, so it is generally eradicated by the joint effort of the True Lords."

"For example, if I fail this time, it will be True Lord Feixue who will eliminate the Dao Calamity I become."

True Person Chong Guang even used himself as an example, but before he finished speaking, Lü Yang stood up with a solemn expression and declared firmly:

"Martial Uncle, please do not speak such nonsense!"

"This time, Martial Uncle seeks gold with full preparation, protected by True Lords above and with our lives below. There is certainly a tenfold chance of success. Martial Uncle, do not let your Dao heart waver!"

"Hahaha, you are right. I misspoke."

True Person Chong Guang squinted his eyes slightly.

Although he knew Lü Yang was flattering him, the words made sense, so he still found them pleasing.

Seeing this, True Person Yinshan, who had been silently watching from the side, could only sigh in his heart.

A hundred years had passed.

Back then, he was the revered senior in Lü Yang's eyes, but now, it seemed Lü Yang was closer to Senior Brother Chong Guang.

He himself had been relegated to the lowest seat.

Thinking back, it was still because he had been too tongue-tied!

Why hadn't I thought of saying such words just now?

That said, True Person Yinshan didn't harbor any negative emotions.

He quickly adjusted his mindset and said calmly:

"Senior Brother has prepared all the internal factors."

"As for internal tribulations, Senior Brother is fully capable of overcoming them."

"The only concern is the external tribulation."

True Person Yinshan's words made Lü Yang's expression turn serious:

"External tribulation... Does Senior Brother mean that on the day Martial Uncle seeks ascension, there will be an external attack?"

"Not 'might', but 'definitely'."

True Person Chong Guang chuckled softly:

"After all, I cannot break through within the Primordial Saint Sect."

"In fact, to seek ascension, I must travel to another territory."

Lü Yang frowned:

"Which territory?"

"That place lies southwest of Jiangbei."

"It is called 【Kingdom of Qing】 ."

True Person Chong Guang explained:

"This place is a marvel left behind when our Saint Sect lost to the Dao Court in a past Dao-seizing war, struck into Jiangbei by the Dao Court's Son of Heaven."

"The cultivation within it differs greatly from Jiangbei. It was modeled after the Dao Court and is located at the border between Jiangxi and Jiangdong. It serves as the Dao Court's stronghold for entering Jiangbei."

"I intend to take it as the resource for my ascension."

As his words fell, the energy around True Person Chong Guang suddenly shifted.

Like a spark at first, it quickly surged into a raging blaze.

"Do you know the nature of the 【Overturning Lamp Flame】 ?"

Inside the grand hall, True Person Chong Guang's voice became ethereal.

Lü Yang's expression turned solemn.

He had once witnessed the manifestation of the 【Overturning Lamp Flame】 through the miraculous power of 【Treading Danger】 from the 【Abhijna Sword】 .

"The 【Overturning Lamp Flame】 is actually the light of a golden lamp, illuminating places the sun and moon do not reach, bringing light to times when Heaven and Earth remain unlit."

"Yuan Tu was right."

True Person Chong Guang nodded upon hearing this:

"To seek ascension, one's words and actions must align with the imagery of the fruit position itself, only then can resonance with the fruit position be drawn."

"The 【Overturning Lamp Flame】 illuminates where the sun and moon do not, bringing light to unlit Heaven and Earth."

"I take from it the concept of 'inversion', so I must verify it by reversing the rules of other fruit positions."

"And the 【Kingdom of Qing】 , being the marvel the Dao Court's Son of Heaven struck into Jiangbei, naturally contains the rules of the Dao Court's fruit position."

"This is my opportunity to attain the Dao."

At this point, True Person Chong Guang finally laid out his plan:

"I intend to reincarnate into the 【Kingdom of Qing】 and reverse its Dao Court order from within."

As he spoke, radiant brilliance emerged behind him.

It was as if a lamp had been lit, its weak flame gradually spreading a bright glow.

"I have cultivated the 【Six Harmonies Bright Essence Dao Qi】 through the 《Heartfire Illuminating the Divine Pill Scripture》, built the 【Chonghua Sun Pavilion Dao Foundation】, and refined my innate divine ability 【Bright Scenery Flight Diagram】."

"Combining the Heavenly Gang and Earthly Fiends, I have transformed them into innate divine abilities."

"With the 【Everlasting Spring Tree】 , 【Yin Dragon Water】 , 【Dread of Felling】 , and 【Rigid Flame Furnace】 , I have completed my life essence."

"Thus forming the 【Dongyang Blessed Land】 !"

As his words fell, the brilliance behind True Person Chong Guang fully condensed, vaguely revealing pavilions and towers, with the rising sun and flying scenery illuminating the entire grand hall!

"Once I reverse the 【Kingdom of Qing】 , I shall surely earn the favor of the fruit position and ascend to seek gold!"

Bathed in the radiant light, Lü Yang's expression grew heavy.

He understood True Person Chong Guang's meaning.

This so-called seeking of gold was actually a massive ritual to attract the attention of the fruit position.

With the fruit position's guidance, the direction of the 【Blessed Land】 's ascension could be ensured.

Otherwise, if the direction was wrong and the 【Blessed Land】 flew to the wrong fruit position's domain, at best the Blessed Land would fall, at worst it would shatter, resulting in failure.

True Person Chong Guang was at this stage now, his cultivation perfected, his golden nature complete, fully capable of breaking through.

All that remained was the final step—gaining the favor of the 【Overturning Lamp Flame】 to point him to the location of the fruit position.

Once successful, the ascension of the 【Blessed Land】 into the 【Grotto-Heaven】 would be certain.

"I am willing to give my life for Martial Uncle!"

Without hesitation, Lü Yang declared his commitment.

True Person Yinshan followed closely behind, and seeing this, True Person Chong Guang finally retracted his energy slowly.

"Naturally, I trust you, otherwise I would not have entrusted this matter to you."

"However, reversing the rules of a fruit position is no small matter."

"To succeed, external help alone is useless."

"There must be cooperation from both inside and outside, attacking together. Only under such pressure can the rules of the fruit position be broken."

"My reincarnation into the 【Kingdom of Qing】 is to act from within."

"Therefore, I also need you to gather the cultivators of Jiangbei and march south to attack the 【Kingdom of Qing】 , applying external pressure to create the opportunity for my reversal."

As his words fell, Lü Yang let out a heavy breath.

No wonder when he had picked up the corpses overseas this time, even after gaining immense benefits, neither True Lord Feixue nor True Person Chong Guang had minded.

It turned out they wanted him to risk his life!

March south to attack the 【Kingdom of Qing】 ?

There was no need to think twice.

As the marvel left behind by the Dao Court's Son of Heaven in Jiangbei, this would inevitably pit them against the Dao Court.

Moreover, marching south meant that the Sword Pavilion would likely get involved!

Under such circumstances, Lü Yang naturally needed to be as strong as possible.

That was why True Person Chong Guang was eager for him to gain more benefits.

How could he possibly compete with him for those benefits?

After all, nothing was more important than Chong Guang's ascension to seek gold.

In other words, Lü Yang had already gained so much.

How could he refuse to take action?

With this thought, Lü Yang immediately cupped his hands and declared loudly:

"I am willing to follow Martial Uncle's will. Please instruct me when to march south, I shall not decline!"

Seeing this, True Person Chong Guang finally let out a hearty laugh:

"Yuan Tu, you may rise."

"I have already received True Lord Feixue's decree."

"Before marching south, Yuan Tu may visit the Manifestation Pavilion at the Sacred Fire Cliff to acquire one or two techniques for self-protection."

After speaking, True Person Chong Guang exchanged a glance with Lü Yang, and the two smiled at each other.

It was clear that True Person Chong Guang understood perfectly.

Lü Yang's prior declaration was a matter of loyalty.

However, loyalty could not fill the stomach.

As True Persons of the Saint Sect, no one took empty promises seriously, so True Person Chong Guang did not speak of illusions.

Lü Yang had just agreed to take action, and in the next moment, Chong Guang offered real benefits.

This was the true tradition of the Saint Sect!

Share to your friends

Tip: You can use left, right keyboard keys to browse between chapters.